















A  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
WORK OF REDEMPTION.

COMPRISING  
AN OUTLINE OF CHURCH HISTORY.

---

BY PRESIDENT EDWARDS.

---

REVISED AND SLIGHTLY ABRIDGED.

PUBLISHED BY THE  
AMERICAN TRACT SOCIETY,  
150 NASSAU STREET, NEW-YORK.



NO

---

This inestimable work was written by President Edwards in 1739, in a series of sermons preached at Northampton, and left by him in manuscript at his death, which occurred in 1758. In 1773, his son, the younger President Edwards, committed the manuscript to Rev. Dr. JOHN ERSKINE, of Edinburgh, who reduced it from the form of sermons to that of a continued treatise, and published it in 1774.

This edition is a reprint from the standard edition of Edwards' Works now generally circulated in Great Britain and the United States, and has been compared throughout with the first American edition, published at Worcester in 1808. Some additional improvements have been made in the language and form of the sub divisions, and a new table of contents prepared; with the omission (indicated by \* \*) of a few lines alluding to points on which evangelical christians differ.

---

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
Lyrasis Members and Sloan Foundation

# CONTENTS.

---

- GENERAL INTRODUCTION**—prosperity of the enemies of Christ short—happy portion of God's people—work of redemption carried on from the fall to the end of the world—explanation of the term Redemption—in what sense the work is here viewed—its design—divided into three periods, 11
- 

## PERIOD I.—FROM THE FALL TO THE INCARNATION

- CHAP. I. FROM THE FALL TO THE FLOOD**—Christ enters on his mediatorial work—first revelation of the Gospel—institution of sacrifices—salvation of individuals begun—first outpouring of the Spirit—Enoch's holy life, prediction of Christ and translation—preservation of the church from the deluge, 28
- CHAP. II. FROM THE FLOOD TO THE CALLING OF ABRAHAM**—the flood itself—Noah's preservation—new grant of the earth to Noah and his family—renewal of the covenant of grace—destruction of Babel—dispersion of the nations—preservation of the church from idolatry, 48
- CHAP. III. FROM THE CALLING OF ABRAHAM TO MOSES**—call of Abraham—renewal of the covenant of grace—preservation of the patriarchs—destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah—renewal of covenant of grace to Isaac and Jacob—preservation from famine by Joseph—Jacob's prophecy of Christ—preservation of the church in Egypt, 59
- CHAP. IV. FROM MOSES TO DAVID**—redemption of the church from Egypt—other nations given up to heathenism—moral law given at Sinai—typical law—first written word of God—journey in the wilderness—shortening of man's life—preserva-

tion forty years by miracle—further predictions of Christ by Balaam and Moses—piety of the younger generation in the wilderness—establishment in Canaan—stated worship of the tabernacle—the land preserved while the males go up to worship—the church preserved during their frequent apostasies, and when subdued by enemies—Christ appears in the form of human nature—beginning of a succession of prophets, and school of the prophets, 77

**CHAP. V. FROM DAVID TO THE BABYLONISH CAPTIVITY—**David, the ancestor of Christ, anointed—his life wonderfully preserved—canon of Scripture enlarged by Samuel—David foreshows Christ in songs—is exalted to the throne—city of Jerusalem chosen, a type of Christ—covenant of grace renewed with David—whole promised land possessed—Jewish worship perfected—canon enlarged by Nathan and Gad—the kingdom preserved in the line of Christ's legal ancestors—building of the temple—Jewish church risen to its highest glory—its decline till Christ came—additions to canon of Scripture—true religion upheld, book of the law kept, and tribe of Judah preserved, amid great apostasies and convulsions—succession of eminent prophets, 109

**CHAP. VI. FROM THE CAPTIVITY TO CHRIST—**a period much the subject of prophecy, and one of great revolutions—captivity in Babylon—cures the Jews of idolatry—glory of the Jewish dispensation lost—effects of their dispersion—additions to canon of Scripture by Ezekiel and Daniel—return of the Jews—further additions to the canon—the ministry of Ezra—copies of the law multiplied—canon of Old Testament completed and sealed—destruction of the Persian empire and establishment of the Grecian—the Septuagint—preservation of the church—destruction of the Grecian, and establishment of the Roman empire—prevalence of learning and philosophy—Roman empire settled in peace, 149

**CHAP. VII. IMPROVEMENT OF THE FIRST PERIOD, 192**



## PERIOD II.—FROM CHRIST'S INCARNATION TO HIS RESURRECTION.

CHAP. I. CHRIST'S INCARNATION—accomplished in the fullness of time—greatness of the event—remarkable circumstances attending it—the return of the Spirit—the sceptre departing from Judah, 207

CHAP. II. THE PURCHASE OF REDEMPTION—Christ's satisfaction and merit—his sufferings and humiliation—his obedience and righteousness—his forerunner—his preaching—his miracles—sending out his disciples—the virtues he exercised—sufferings of his infancy—private life, and public life—his last humiliation and sufferings, 218

CHAP. III. IMPROVEMENT OF THE SECOND PERIOD—for reproof—for encouragement, 247

## PERIOD III.—FROM CHRIST'S RESURRECTION TO THE END OF THE WORLD.

INTRODUCTION TO THIS PERIOD—Scriptural representations of it—how Christ was capacitated for accomplishing the end of his purchase—means of success—abolishing the Jewish dispensation—instituting the Sabbath—the ministry—gift of the Holy Ghost—revelation of gospel truth—appointment of deacons—mission of apostle Paul—writing of the New Testament—how the success was carried on, 261

CHAP. I. FROM RESURRECTION OF CHRIST TO THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM—success of the Gospel among the Jews—Samaritans—Gentiles—opposition encountered—judgments on the persecuting Jews, 290

CHAP. II. FROM THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM TO THE TIME OF CONSTANTINE—opposition from the Roman empire—success of the Gospel—bitter persecu-

tions—great revolution by Constantine—arguments for truth of Christianity, 303

CHAP. III. FROM CONSTANTINE TO THE RISE OF ANTICHRIST—opposition from heresies and paganism—propagation of the Gospel, 319

CHAP. IV. FROM RISE OF ANTICHRIST TO THE REFORMATION—rise of kingdom of Antichrist, “the mystery of iniquity”—the Mohammedan kingdom—some nations and individuals long remain steadfast in the faith—the Waldenses—Wickliff, Huss, Jerome of Prague, 324

CHAP. V. FROM THE REFORMATION TO THE PRESENT TIME—the reformation—Luther, Melancthon, Zuinglius, Calvin—nations embracing the reformed religion—the Pope’s authority diminished—Council of Trent—secret plots of the Papists—open war against Protestants—cruel persecutions—courts of Inquisition—corrupt opinions—reformation in doctrine and worship—spread of the Gospel among the heathen—revival of the power and practice of religion—the reformed church diminished—prevailing licentiousness and fanaticism—diminution of influence of the Pope and persecution—prevalence of learning, 335

CHAP. VI. IMPROVEMENT OF PAST EVENTS—evidence that the Scriptures are the word of God, from opposition of the world, the stability of the church, and fulfilment of prophecies especially those respecting Antichrist—from the spirit of suffering exhibited by Christians—prophecies remaining to be fulfilled, 357

CHAP. VII. FROM PRESENT TIME TO FALL OF ANTICHRIST—a very dark time must first come—the glorious work of God will be introduced swiftly but gradually—by the revival and propagation of religion—violent and mighty opposition—Satan’s kingdom destroyed—heresies, infidelity, and superstition vanish—Antichrist, Mohammedanism, Judaism, and paganism overthrown—Satan’s kingdom universally demolished. 372

- CHAP. VIII. PERIOD OF THE CHURCH'S PROSPERITY—**  
the kingdom of heaven comes—prophecies fulfilled—knowledge, holiness, peace, love, and order prevail—temporal prosperity—joy and gladness—for a thousand years—*Great Apostasy*, 394
- CHAP. IX. THE GENERAL JUDGMENT—**salvation and glory of the redeemed—Christ comes in glory of his Father—the last trumpet sounds—saints meet the Lord in the air—wicked men and devils arraigned—all characters revealed—the sentence pronounced—the world on fire—the church enter with Christ into the highest heavens, 408
- CHAP. X. IMPROVEMENT OF THE WHOLE—**greatness of the work of redemption—its progress through all time, and glorious issue—God the Alpha and Omega of all things—exaltation of Christ—consistency, order, and beauty of God's works of providence—the Scriptures, which show God's design in all these works, must be divine—display of God's majesty and power in redemption—his wisdom—mercy and faithfulness—happiness of God's people—misery of his enemies, 427



# A HISTORY OF THE WORK OF REDEMPTION.

---

## GENERAL INTRODUCTION.

For the moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool: but my righteousness shall be for ever, and my salvation from generation to generation.—ISAIAH, 51 : 8

The design of this chapter is to comfort the church under her sufferings, and the persecutions of her enemies; and the argument of consolation insisted on, is the constancy and perpetuity of God's mercy and faithfulness, which shall be manifest in continuing to work salvation for her, protecting her against all assaults of her enemies, carrying her safely through all the changes of the world, and finally, crowning her with victory and deliverance.

This happiness of the church of God is here set forth by comparing it with the contrary fate of her enemies that oppress her: and we may observe,

I. *How short-lived are the power and prosperity of the enemies of the church:* "The moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool:" however great their prosperity, and their present glory, they shall by degrees consume and vanish away by a secret curse of God, till they come to nothing, and all their power and

glory ; and so their persecution, eternally cease, and they be finally and irrecoverably ruined : as the finest and most glorious apparel will in time wear away, and be consumed by the moth and worm. The preceding verse shows that those who shall thus consume away, are the enemies of God's people : "Hearken unto me, ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law, fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings."

II. The contrary *happy lot and portion of God's church* is : "My righteousness shall be for ever, and my salvation from generation to generation." The preceding verse also shows who shall have the benefit of this : they "that know righteousness," and "the people in whose heart is God's law : " or, in one word, the church of God. And concerning their happiness, we may observe, wherein it consists ; and its continuance.

1. It consists in God's "*righteousness*" and "*salvation*." By God's *righteousness* is here meant his faithfulness in fulfilling his covenant-promises to his church, or, his faithfulness to his church and people, in bestowing the benefits of the covenant of grace upon them. Though these benefits are bestowed of free and sovereign grace ; yet as God has been pleased, by the promises of the covenant of grace, to bind himself to bestow them, they are bestowed in the exercise of God's righteousness or justice. And therefore the apostle says, Heb. 6 : 10. "God is not unrighteous, to forget your work and labor of love." And 1 John, 1 : 9. "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." So the word *righteousness* is very often used in Scrip-

ture for God's covenant-faithfulness; as in Nehem. 9: 8. "Thou hast performed thy words, for thou art righteous." So we are often to understand righteousness and covenant-mercy for the same thing; as Psalm 24: 5. "He shall receive the blessing from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation." Psalm 36: 10. "Continue thy loving-kindness to them that know thee, and thy righteousness to the upright in heart." And Psalm 51: 14. "Deliver me from blood-guiltiness, O God, thou God of my salvation; and my tongue shall sing aloud of thy righteousness." Dan. 9: 16. "O Lord, according to thy righteousness, I beseech thee, let thine anger and thy fury be turned away."

God's *salvation* here spoken of is the effect, of which his righteousness is the cause. His righteousness, or covenant-mercy, is the root, of which his salvation is the fruit. Both of them relate to the covenant of grace. The one is God's covenant-mercy and faithfulness, the other intends that work of God by which this covenant-mercy is accomplished in its fruits. For salvation is the sum of all those works of God by which the benefits of the covenant of grace are procured and bestowed.

2. Its *continuance* is here signified by two expressions: *for ever*, and *from generation to generation*; the latter seeming to be explanatory of the former. The phrase *for ever*, is variously used in Scripture. Sometimes it means *as long as a man lives*. It is said, that the servant who had his ear bored through with an awl to the door of his master, should be his *for ever*. Sometimes it means during the *continuance of the Jewish state*. Of many of the ceremonial and Levitical laws it is said that they should be

statutes *for ever*. Sometimes it means *as long as the world shall stand*, or to the end of the generations of men. Thus Eccles. 1 : 4. "One generation passeth away, and another cometh; but the earth abideth for ever." Sometimes it means *to all eternity*. So it is said, "God blessed for ever," Rom. 1 : 25. "If any man eat of this bread, he shall live *for ever*." John, 6 : 51. Which of these senses is here to be understood, the next words determine, namely, *to the end of the world*, or to the end of the generations of men :—"and my salvation *from generation to generation*." Indeed the *fruits* of God's salvation shall remain after the end of the world, as appears by ver. 6 : "Lift up your eyes to the heavens, and look upon the earth beneath : for the heavens shall vanish away like smoke, and the earth shall wax old like a garment, and they that dwell therein shall die in like manner, but my salvation shall be for ever, and my righteousness shall not be abolished." But the work of salvation itself shall continue to be wrought till then : till the end of the world God will go on to accomplish deliverance and salvation for the church, from all her enemies : *till the end of the world*, till her enemies cease to be, or to have any power to molest the church. And this expression, *from generation to generation*, may determine us as to the time which God continues to carry on the work of salvation for his church, both with respect to the beginning and end. It is "from generation to generation," that is, throughout all generations ; beginning with the generations of men on the earth, and not ending till those generations end. And therefore we deduce from these words *his doctrine* :



THE WORK OF REDEMPTION IS A WORK THAT GOD CARRIES ON FROM THE FALL OF MAN TO THE END OF THE WORLD.

The generations of mankind which began after the fall, by ordinary generation, are partakers of the corruption of nature that followed from it; and these generations, by which the human race is propagated, shall continue to the end of the world. These two are the limits of the generations of men on the earth; the fall of man, and the end of the world, or the day of judgment. The same are the limits of the work of redemption, as to those progressive works of God by which that redemption is accomplished, though not as to the *fruits* of it; for they shall be eternal.

The work of redemption and the work of salvation are the same thing. What is sometimes in Scripture called God's *saving* his people, is in other places called his *redeeming* them. So Christ is called both the *Savior* and the *Redeemer* of his people.

BEFORE entering on the proposed History of the Work of Redemption, I would show in what sense the term *redemption* is used; how this work is *carried on*; and what is its *design*.

The work of REDEMPTION is sometimes understood in a more *limited* sense, for the *purchase* of salvation; for the word strictly signifies a purchase of deliverance. If we take the word in this *restrained* sense, the work of redemption was not so long in doing; but was begun and finished with Christ's humiliation. It was begun with Christ's *incarnation*, carried on through his life, and finished

with the time of his remaining under the power of death, which ended in his resurrection. Thus we say, that on the day of his resurrection Christ finished the work of redemption: then the purchase was completed, and the work itself, and all that appertained to it, was *virtually* done and finished, but not *actually*.

But sometimes the work of redemption is taken more *largely*, as including all that God accomplishes tending to this end; not only the purchase itself, but also all God's works that were properly preparatory to the purchase, and accomplishing the success of it. So that the whole dispensation, as it includes the preparation and purchase, the application and success of Christ's redemption, is here called the work of *redemption*: all that Christ does in this great work as Mediator, in any of his offices, either of Prophet, Priest, or King; either when he was in this world in his human nature, or before or since. And it includes not only what Christ the Mediator has done, but also what the Father or the Holy Ghost has done, as united or confederated in this design of redeeming sinful men: or in one word, all that is wrought in execution of the eternal covenant of redemption. It is in this large sense that I here speak of the work of redemption; for it is all but one work, one design. The various dispensations of works that belong to it, are but the several parts of one scheme. It is but one design that is formed, to which all the offices of Christ directly tend, and in which all the persons of the Trinity conspire. All the various dispensations that belong to it are united; and the several wheels are one machine, to answer one end, and produce one effect.

When I say, this work is CARRIED ON FROM THE FALL OF MAN TO THE END OF THE WORLD, I *do not mean*, that nothing was done in order to it *before* the fall of man. Some things were done before the world was created; yea, from eternity. The persons of the Trinity were, as it were, confederated in a design, and a covenant of redemption. In this covenant the Father had appointed the Son, and the Son had undertaken the work; and all things to be accomplished in the work were stipulated and agreed. There were things done at the creation of the world, bearing on this work; for the world itself seems to have been created in order to it. The work of creation was in order to God's work of providence. So that if it be inquired, which are greatest, the works of creation or those of providence; I answer, the works of providence; because those of providence are the *end* of the works of creation; as the building of a house, or the forming of a machine, is for its *use*. But God's main work of providence is this of redemption, as will more fully appear. The creation of heaven was in order to this work; as a habitation for the redeemed; Matt. 25:34. "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." Even the *angels* were created to be employed in this work. And therefore the apostle calls them "*ministering spirits sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation*:" Heb. 1:14. As to this *lower world*, it was doubtless created to be a stage upon which this great and wonderful work of redemption should be transacted: and therefore, as might be shown in many respects, this world is wisely fitted,

in its formation, for such a state of man as he is in since the fall, under a possibility of redemption.

Nor is it meant that there will be no remaining fruits of this work *after* the end of the world. That glory and blessedness that will be the sum of all the fruits, will remain to all the saints for ever. The work of redemption is not a work always doing and never accomplished. The *fruits* of it are eternal, but the *work* has an issue. In the issue the end will be obtained ; which end will last for ever. As those things which were in order to this work—God's electing love, and the covenant of redemption—never had a beginning ; so the fruits of this work will never have an end. And therefore,

When I say that this is a work that God is carrying on from the fall of man to the end of the world, *I mean that those things which belong to this work itself, and are parts of the scheme, are all this while accomplishing.* There were some things done preparatory to its beginning, and the fruits of it will remain after it is finished. But the work itself was begun immediately upon the fall, and will continue to the end of the world. The various dispensations of God during this space belong to the same work, and to the same design, and have all one issue ; and therefore are all to be reckoned but as several successive motions of one machine to bring about in the conclusion one great event.

And here also we must distinguish between the parts of *redemption* itself, and the parts of the *work* by which that redemption is wrought out. There is a difference between the *benefits*, and the *work* of God by which those benefits were procured and bestowed. For example, the redemption of Israel out

of Egypt, considered as the benefit which they enjoyed, consisted of their deliverance from bondage and misery; and their being brought into a more happy state, as the servants of God and heirs of Canaan. But there are many more things which are *parts of that work*. To this belong his calling of Moses, his sending him to Pharaoh, the signs and wonders he wrought in Egypt, his bringing such terrible judgments on the Egyptians, and many other things.

Such is this work by which God effects redemption, and it is carried on from the fall of man to the end of the world, in two respects.

1. With respect to the *effect wrought on the souls of the redeemed*; which is common to all ages. This effect is the application of redemption with respect to the souls of particular persons, in converting, justifying, sanctifying, and glorifying them. By these things they are actually redeemed, and receive the benefit of the work in its effects. And in this sense the work of redemption is carried on in all ages, from the fall of man to the end of the world. The work of God in converting souls, opening blind eyes, unstopping deaf ears, raising the spiritually dead to life, and rescuing miserable captives out of the hands of Satan, was begun soon after the fall, has been carried on ever since, and will be to the end of the world. God has always had such a church in the world. Though oftentimes it has been reduced to a very narrow compass, and to low circumstances; yet it has never wholly failed.

And as God carries on the work of converting the souls of fallen men through all ages, so he goes

on to justify them, to blot out all their sins, and to accept them as righteous in his sight, through the righteousness of Christ. He goes on to adopt and receive them from being the children of Satan, to be his own children, to carry on the work of his grace which he has begun in them, to comfort them with the consolations of his Spirit, and to bestow upon them, when their bodies die, that eternal glory which is the fruit of Christ's purchase. What is said, Rom. 8: 30, "Whom he did predestinate, them he also called; and whom he called, them he also justified; and whom he justified, them he also glorified;"—is applicable to all ages, from the fall to the end of the world. And the way of effecting this, is by repeating continually the same work over again, though in different persons, from age to age. But,

2. The work of redemption with respect to the *grand design in general*, as it respects the universal subject and end, is carried on—not merely by repeating or renewing the same effect in the different subjects of it, but—by many successive works and dispensations of God, all tending to one great effect, united as the several parts of a scheme, and altogether making up one great work. Like a temple that is building; first the workmen are sent forth, then the materials are gathered, the ground is fitted, and the foundation laid; then the superstructure is erected, one part after another, till at length the top-stone is laid, and all is finished. The work of redemption, in this large sense, may be compared to such a building. God began it immediately after the fall, and will proceed to the end of the world.

Then shall the top-stone be brought forth, and all will appear complete and glorious.

This work is carried on in the *former* respect as being an effect common to all ages; and in the *latter* respect, the grand design in general, not only by that which is common to all ages, but by successive works wrought in different ages, all parts of one great scheme. It is this last that I shall chiefly insist upon, though not excluding the former; for one necessarily supposes the other.

I proceed to show what is the DESIGN of this great work, or what is to be accomplished by it. In order to see how any design is carried on, we must first know what it is. To know how a workman proceeds, and to understand the various steps he takes in order to accomplish a piece of work, we need to be informed what he *intends* to accomplish; otherwise we may stand by, seeing him do one thing after another, and be quite puzzled, because we see nothing of his scheme. Suppose an architect, with a great number of hands, were building a palace; and a stranger to such things should stand by, and see some men digging in the earth, others bringing timber, others hewing stones, and the like; he might see that there was a great deal done, but if he knew not the *design*, it would all appear to him confusion. And therefore, that the great works and dispensations of God which belong to this great work of redemption may not appear like confusion to you, I would notice briefly the *main things* designed to be accomplished.

1. It is to put all God's enemies under his feet, and that *his goodness may finally appear triumphant*

*over all evil.* Soon after the world was created evil entered into the world in the fall of the angels and man. Presently after God had made rational creatures, enemies rose up against him from among them; and in the fall of man evil entered into this world; where also God's enemies rose up against him. Satan endeavored to frustrate his design in the creation of this world, to destroy his workmanship, to wrest the government of it out of his hands, to usurp the throne, and set up himself as the god of this world, instead of him who made it. To these ends he introduced sin into the world; and having made man God's enemy, he introduced guilt, and death, and the most dreadful misery.

One great design of God, in the work of redemption, was to subdue those enemies. "He must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet." 1 Cor. 15: 25. Things were originally so planned, that he might disappoint, confound, and triumph over Satan; and that he might be bruised under Christ's feet. Gen. 3: 15. The promise was given, that the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head. It was a part of God's original design in this work, to destroy the works of the devil, and confound him in all his purposes: "For this purpose was the Son of God manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil." 1 John, 3: 8. It was a part of his design to triumph over sin, and over the corruptions of men, and to root them out of the hearts of his people, by conforming them to himself. He designed also that his grace should triumph over man's guilt, and sin's infinite demerit. Again, it was a part of his design to triumph over death; and though this is the last enemy that shall be overcome, yet this



shall finally be vanquished and destroyed. Thus God appears glorious above all evil, and triumphant over all his enemies by the work of redemption.

2. God's design was perfectly to restore all *the ruins of the fall*, so far as concerns the elect part of the world, by his Son; and therefore we read of the restitution of all things, "Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things," Acts, 3:21; and of the times of refreshing from the presence of the Lord Jesus, "Repent ye and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord." Acts, 3:19.

Man's *soul* was ruined by the fall; the image of God was defaced; man's nature was corrupted, and he became dead in sin. The design of God was to restore the soul of man to life, and the divine image in conversion, to carry on the change in sanctification, and to perfect it in glory. Man's body was ruined; by the fall it became subject to death. The design of God was to restore it from this ruin, and not only to deliver it from death in the resurrection, but to deliver it from mortality itself, in making it like unto Christ's glorious body. The *world* was ruined, as to man, as effectually as if it had been reduced to *chaos* again; all heaven and earth were overthrown. But the design of God was to restore all, and as it were create a new heaven and a new earth: "We, according to his promise, look for new heavens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness." 2 Pet. 3:13; Isa. 65:17.

The work by which this was to be done was be-

gun immediately after the fall, and so is carried on till all is finished, when the whole world, heaven and earth, shall be restored. There shall be, as it were, new heavens, and a new earth, in a spiritual sense, at the end of the world. Thus it is represented, Rev. 21 : 1. " And I saw a new heaven, and a new earth ; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away."

3. Another great design of God in the work of redemption, was to "*gather together in one all things in Christ*, in heaven and in earth," and to unite all in one body to God the Father. This was begun soon after the fall, and is carried on through all ages, and shall be finished at the end of the world.

4. God designed by this work to perfect and complete the *glory of all the elect by Christ*—glory, "such as eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, nor has entered into the heart of man." He intended to bring them to perfect excellency and beauty in his holy image, which is the proper beauty of spiritual beings ; and to advance them to a glorious degree of honor, and raise them to an ineffable height of pleasure and joy. Thus he designed to glorify the whole church in soul and body, and with them to bring the glory of the elect angels to its highest elevation under one head.

5. In all this God designed to accomplish the *glory of the blessed Trinity* in an eminent degree. God had a design of glorifying himself from eternity ; yea, to glorify each person in the Godhead. The *end* must be considered as first in order of nature, and then the means ; and therefore we must conceive that God having professed this end, had then as it were the means to choose ; and the prin-

cial means that he adopted was this great work of redemption. It was his design in this work to glorify his only-begotten Son Jesus Christ; and by the Son to glorify the Father. John, 13 : 31, 32. "Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him." It was his design that the Son should thus be glorified, and should glorify the Father by what should be accomplished by the Spirit to the glory of the Spirit, that the whole Trinity conjunctly, and each person singly, might be exceedingly glorified. The work that was the appointed means of this, was begun immediately after the fall, and is carried on till the end of the world, when it will be finished, and all this intended glory shall be fully accomplished in all things.

With these explanations, I proceed to the proposed History: to show how what was designed by the work of redemption is accomplished, in *its progress* from the fall of man to the end of the world. And in order to this I would divide this whole space of time into three periods: 1. from the fall of man to the incarnation of Christ: 2. from Christ's incarnation till his resurrection; or the whole time of Christ's humiliation: 3. from thence to the end of the world. Some may be ready to think this a very unequal division; but the second period, although so much shorter than either of the others, in this work embraces more than both.

I proceed to show distinctly how the work of redemption is carried on through each of these periods in their order, under three propositions.

I. *That from the fall of man to the incarnation of Christ, God was doing those things which were preparatory to his coming, as forerunners and earnest of it.*

II. *That the time from Christ's incarnation to his resurrection, was spent in procuring and purchasing redemption.*

III. *That the space of time from the resurrection of Christ to the end of the world, is all taken up in bringing about or accomplishing the great effect or success of that purpose.*

## **P E R I O D   I .**

### **FROM THE FALL TO THE INCARNATION.**

The great works of God in the world, during this whole space of time, were all preparatory. There were many great changes and revolutions, and they were all only the turning of the wheels of providence to make way for the coming of Christ. Hither tended especially all God's great works towards his church. The church was under various dispensations, and in very various circumstances, before Christ came; but all these dispensations were to prepare the way for his coming. God wrought salvation for the souls of men through all that space of time, though the number was very small to what it was afterwards; and all this was by way of anticipation. All the souls that were saved before Christ came, were only the earnest of the future harvest.

God wrought many deliverances for his church

and people before Christ came ; but these were only so many images and forerunners of the great salvation he was to work out. The church during that space of time enjoyed the light of divine revelation. They had in a degree the light of the Gospel. But all these revelations were only so many earnestings of the great light that he should bring who came to be the Light of the world. That whole space of time was the time of night, wherein the church of God was not indeed wholly without light ; but it was like the light of the moon and stars ; a dim light in comparison of the light of the sun, and mixed with a great deal of darkness. It " had no glory by reason of the glory that excelleth." 2 Cor. 3 : 10. The church had indeed the light of the sun, but it was only as reflected from the moon and stars. The church all that while was a minor. Gal. 4 : 1-3. " Now I say that the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all ; but is under tutors and governors, until the time appointed of the father. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world."

For greater clearness and distinctness, I shall subdivide this period into six lesser periods :

- First. From the fall to the flood ;
- Second. From the flood to the calling of Abraham ;
- Third. From the calling of Abraham to Moses ;
- Fourth. From Moses to David ;
- Fifth. From David to the captivity in Babylon ;
- Sixth. From the captivity to the incarnation of Christ.

## CHAPTER I.

## FROM THE FALL TO THE FLOOD.

Though this period was the most distant from Christ's incarnation, yet then was this glorious building begun.

I. As soon as man fell, Christ *entered on his mediatorial work*. Then it was that he began to execute the work and office of a Mediator. He had undertaken it before the world was made. He stood engaged with the Father from eternity, to appear as man's Mediator, and to take on him that office, when there should be occasion. And now the time was come. Christ the eternal Son of God clothed himself with the mediatorial character, and therein immediately presented himself before the Father as Mediator between a holy, infinite, offended Majesty, and offending mankind. He was accepted in his interposition; and thus wrath was prevented from going forth in the full execution of the amazing curse that man had brought on himself.

It is manifest that Christ began to exercise the office of *Mediator* between God and man as soon as man fell, because mercy began to be exercised towards man immediately. There was mercy in the forbearance of God, that he did not destroy him, as he did the angels when they fell. But there is no mercy exercised towards fallen man except through a Mediator. If God had not in mercy restrained Satan, he would immediately have seized on his prey. Christ began to do the part of an *intercessor* for man as soon as he fell; for there is no mercy exercised towards

man but what is obtained through Christ's intercession. From that day Christ took on him the care of the church, in the exercise of all his offices. He undertook to *teach* mankind in the exercise of his *prophetical* office: to *intercede* for fallen man in his *priestly* office; and to *govern* the church and the world as a King. He from that time took upon him the defence of his people from all their enemies. When Satan, the grand enemy, had conquered and overthrown man, the business of resisting and conquering him was committed to Christ. He thenceforward undertook to manage that subtle, powerful adversary. He was then appointed the Captain of the Lord's hosts, the Captain of their salvation. Henceforward this world, with all its concerns, devolved upon the Son of God: for when man had sinned, God the Father would have no more to do *immediately* with this world of mankind, that had apostatized from and rebelled against him. He would henceforward act only through a Mediator, either in teaching men, or in governing, or bestowing any benefits on them.

And therefore, when we read in sacred history what God did, from time to time, for his church and people, and how he revealed himself to them, we are to understand it especially of the second person of the Trinity. When we read of God appearing after the fall, in some visible form or outward symbol of his presence, we are ordinarily, if not universally, to understand it of the Son of God. John, 1: 18. "No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him." He is therefore called "the image of the invisible God," Col. 1: 15; intimating, that

though God the Father be invisible, yet Christ is his image or representation, by which he is seen.

Yea, not only this world devolved on Christ, that he might have the care and government of it, and order it agreeably to his design of redemption, but also in some respect the whole universe. The *angels* from that time are subject to him in his mediatorial office, as is manifest by the Scripture history, wherein we have accounts of their acting as ministering spirits in the affairs of the church.

And therefore we may suppose, that immediately on the fall of Adam, it was made known in heaven among the angels, that God had a design of redemption with respect to fallen man; that Christ had now taken upon him the office and work of a Mediator between God and man; and that they were to be subservient to him in this office. And as Christ, in this office, has been solemnly installed the King of heaven, and is thenceforward as God-man, the Light, the Sun of heaven, (agreeable to Rev. 21 : 23,) so this revelation made in heaven among the angels, was as it were the first dawning of this light there. When Christ ascended into heaven, after his passion, and was solemnly enthroned, then this sun arose in heaven, even the Lamb, that is the light of the New Jerusalem.

II. Presently upon this the *Gospel was first revealed* on earth, in these words, Gen. 3 : 15, "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed: it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." We must suppose that God's intention of redeeming fallen man was first signified in heaven, before it was on earth, because the business of the angels, as ministering



Spirits of the Mediator, required it; for as soon as Christ had taken on him the work of a Mediator, it was requisite that the angels should be ready immediately to be subservient to him in that office: so that the light first dawned in heaven; but very soon afterwards, the same was signified on earth. In those words of God there was an intimation of another surety to be appointed for man, after the first surety had failed. 'This was the first revelation of the covenant of grace; the first dawning of the light of the Gospel on earth.

This world before the fall enjoyed noon-day light; the light of the knowledge of God, of his glory, and of his favor. But when man fell, all this light was at once extinguished, and the world reduced again to total darkness; a darkness worse than that which was in the beginning of the world, Gen. 1:2. "Darkness was upon the face of the deep," a darkness a thousand times more remediless than that. Neither men nor angels could find out any way whereby this darkness might be scattered. It appeared in its blackness when Adam and his wife saw that they were naked, and sewed fig-leaves to cover themselves; when they heard the voice of the Lord God, walking in the garden, and hid themselves among the trees. When God first called them to an account, and said to Adam, "What is this that thou hast done? Hast thou eaten of the tree whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldst not eat?" Then we may suppose that their hearts were filled with shame and terror. But these words of God, Gen. 3:15, were the first dawning of gospel light, after this dismal darkness. Before this there was not one glimpse of light, any beam of comfort, or the least hope. It was an obscure

yet comprehensive revelation of the Gospel ; not indeed made to Adam or Eve directly, but contained in what God said to the serpent.

Here was a certain intimation of a merciful design by "the seed of the woman," which was like the first glimmerings of the light in the east when the day first dawns. This intimation of mercy was given even before sentence was pronounced on either Adam or Eve, from tenderness to them, lest they should be overborne with a sentence of condemnation, without having any thing held forth whence they could gather any hope.

One of those great things intended to be done by the work of redemption, is more plainly intimated: God's subduing his enemies under the feet of his Son. God's design of this was now first declared. Satan probably triumphed greatly in the fall of man, as though he had defeated the designs of God in his creation. But in these words God gives him a plain intimation that he should not finally triumph, but that a complete victory and triumph should be obtained over him by the seed of the woman.

This revelation of the Gospel was the first thing that Christ did in his prophetic office. From the fall of man to the incarnation of Christ, God was doing those things that were preparatory to Christ's coming to effect redemption, and were forerunners and earnest of it. And one of those things was to foretell and promise it, as he did from age to age, till Christ came. This was the first promise given, the first prediction made of it.

III. Soon after this, the custom of *sacrificing* was appointed, to be a standing type of the sacrifice of Christ till he should come and offer up himself

a sacrifice to God. Sacrificing was not a custom first established by the Levitical law, for it had been a part of God's instituted worship from the beginning. We read of the patriarchs, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, offering sacrifice, and before them Noah and Abel. And this was by divine appointment; for it was part of God's worship in his church, which was offered up in faith, and which he accepted. This proves that it was by his institution; for sacrificing is no part of natural worship. The light of nature does not teach men to offer up beasts in sacrifice to God; and seeing it was not enjoined by the law of nature, it must, to be acceptable to God, be by some positive command or institution; for God has declared his abhorrence of such worship as is taught by the precept of men without his will. Isa. 29 : 13. And such worship as has not a warrant from divine institution, cannot be offered up in faith, because faith has no foundation where there is no divine appointment. Men have no warrant to hope for God's acceptance, in that which is not of his appointment, and to which he has not promised his acceptance: and therefore it follows, that the custom of offering sacrifices to God was instituted soon after the fall; for the Scripture teaches us, that Abel offered "the firstlings of his flock, and of the fat thereof," Gen. 4 : 4; and that he was accepted of God in this offering, Heb. 11 : 4. And there is nothing in the story intimating that the institution was first given when Abel offered up that sacrifice to God; but it appears that he only therein complied with a custom already established.

It is very probable that sacrifice was instituted  
Redemption.

immediately after God had revealed the covenant of grace, Gen. 3 : 15, as the foundation on which the custom of sacrificing was built. That promise was the first stone laid towards this glorious building, the work of redemption ; and the next stone was the institution of sacrifices, to be a type of the *great Sacrifice*.

The next thing of which we have an account, after God had pronounced sentence on the serpent, on the woman, and on the man, was, that God made them coats of skins, and clothed them ; which are generally thought to be the skins of beasts slain in sacrifice. For we have no account of any thing else that should be the occasion of man's slaying beasts, except to offer them in sacrifice, till after the flood. Men were not wont to eat the flesh of beasts as their common food till after the flood. The food of man before the fall, was the fruit of the trees of paradise ; and after the fall, his food was the produce of the field. Gen. 3 : 18. "And thou shalt eat the herb of the field." The first grant that he had to eat flesh as his common food, was after the flood. Gen. 9 : 3. "Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you ; even as the green herb have I given you all things." So that it is likely these skins with which Adam and Eve were clothed, were the skins of their sacrifices. God's clothing them with these was a lively figure of their being clothed with the righteousness of Christ. This clothing was not of their own obtaining ; but God gave it them. It is said, "*God made them coats of skins, and clothed them,*" as the righteousness with which we are clothed is of God. It is he only clothes the naked soul.

Our first parents, who were naked, were clothed at the expense of life. Beasts were slain, to afford them clothing. So was Christ, to afford clothing to our naked souls. The tabernacle in the wilderness, which signified the church, was covered with rams' skins dyed red, as though they were dipped in blood, to signify that Christ's righteousness was wrought out through the pains of death, under which he shed his precious blood.

We observed before, that the light which the church enjoyed from the fall of man till Christ came, was like the light which we enjoy in the night; not the light of the sun directly, but as reflected from the moon and stars; which light prefigured Christ, the Sun of righteousness afterwards to arise. This light they had chiefly two ways; one by predictions of Christ to come; the other by types and shadows, wherein his coming and redemption were prefigured. The first thing done to prepare the way for Christ in the former method, was in the promise above considered; and the first thing of the latter kind, was the institution of sacrifices. As that promise in Gen. 3 : 15, was the first dawn of gospel light after the fall in *prophecy*; so the institution of *sacrifices* was the first hint of it in types. The former was done in pursuance of Christ's prophetic office; in the latter, Christ exhibited himself in his priestly office.

The institution of sacrifices was a great thing done towards preparing the way for Christ's coming, and working out redemption. For the sacrifices of the Old Testament were the principal of all the Old Testament types of Christ and his redemption; and it tended to establish in the minds of

God's visible church the necessity of a propitiatory sacrifice, in order to the Deity's being satisfied for sin; and so prepared the way for the reception of the glorious Gospel, that reveals the great sacrifice not only in the visible church, but through the world of mankind. For from this institution of sacrifices, all nations derived the custom of sacrificing to the gods, to atone for their sins. No nation, however barbarous, was found without it. This is a great evidence of the truth of revealed religion; for no nation, except the Jews, could tell how they came by this custom, or to what purpose it was to offer sacrifices to their deities. The light of nature did not teach them any such thing. That did not teach them that the gods were hungry, and fed upon the flesh which they burnt in sacrifice; and yet they all had this custom: of which no other account can be given, but that they derived it from Noah, who had it from his ancestors, on whom God had enjoined it as a type of the great sacrifice of Christ. However, by this means all nations of the world had their minds possessed with this notion, that an atonement or sacrifice for sin was necessary; and a way was made for their more readily receiving the great doctrine of the Gospel, the atonement and sacrifice of Christ.

IV. God soon after the fall began actually to *save the souls of men* through Christ's redemption. In this, Christ, who had lately taken upon him the work of Mediator between God and man, did first begin that work, wherein he appeared in the exercise of his *kingly* office; as in the sacrifices he was represented in his *priestly* office, and as in the first predication of redemption by Christ, he had appeared in

the exercise of his *prophetical* office. In that prediction the light of Christ's redemption first began to dawn in the prophecies of it; in the institution of sacrifices it first began to dawn in the *types* of it; in this, viz. his beginning actually to save men, it first began to dawn in the *fruit* of it.

It is probable, therefore, that Adam and Eve were the first fruits of Christ's redemption; it is probable by God's manner of treating them, by his comforting them as he did, after their awakenings and terrors. They were awakened, and ashamed with a sense of their guilt, after their eyes were opened, and they saw that they were naked, and sewed fig-leaves to cover their nakedness; as the sinner, under the first awakenings, is wont to endeavor to hide the nakedness of his soul by a fancied righteousness of his own. Then they were further terrified and awakened, by hearing the voice of God as he was coming to condemn them. Their coverings of fig-leaves did not answer the purpose; they ran to hide themselves among the trees of the garden, because they were naked, not daring to trust to their fig-leaves to hide their nakedness from God. Then they were further awakened by God's calling them to a strict account. But while their terrors were raised to such a height, and they stood, as we may suppose, trembling and astonished before their Judge, without any expedient whence they could gather hope, then God took care to hold forth some encouragement, to keep them from the dreadful effects of despair under their awakenings, by giving a hint of a design of mercy by a Savior, even before he pronounced sentence against them. And when after this he proceeded to pronounce sentence, where-

by we may suppose their terrors were further raised, God soon after took care to encourage them, and to let them see that he had not wholly cast them off, by taking a fatherly care of them in their fallen, naked, and miserable state, by making them coats of skins and clothing them. This also manifested an acceptance of those sacrifices that they offered to God, which were types of what God had promised, when he said, "The seed of the woman shall bruise the serpent's head;" which promise, there is reason to think, they believed and embraced. Eve seems plainly to express her hope in and dependance on that promise, in what she says at the birth of Cain, Gen. 4 : 1, "I have gotten a man from the Lord;" that is, as God has promised that my seed should bruise the serpent's head; so now has God given me this pledge and token of it, that I have a seed born. She plainly owns that this child was from God, and hoped that her promised seed was to be of this, her eldest son; though she was mistaken, as Abraham was with respect to Ishmael, Isaac with respect to Esau, and Samuel with respect to the first-born of Jesse. And especially does what she said at the birth of Seth, express her hope and dependance on the promise of God: "For God hath appointed me another seed, instead of Abel, whom Cain slew."

Thus it is very probable, if not evident, that as Christ took on him the work of Mediator as soon as man fell; so he now immediately began his work of redemption in its *effect*, encountering his great enemy the devil, whom he had undertaken to conquer, and rescuing those two first captives out of his hands; therein baffling him soon after his triumph over them, whereby he had made them his captives.



And though he seemed sure of them and all their posterity, Christ the Redeemer soon showed him that he was mistaken. He let him see it, in delivering those first captives, and so soon gave him an instance of the fulfillment of that threatening, *The seed of the woman shall bruise the serpent's head*, and in this instance a presage of his subduing all his enemies under his feet.

After this we have another instance of redemption in one of their children, "righteous Abel," as the Scripture calls him; whose soul perhaps was the first that went to heaven through Christ's redemption. In him we have at least the first recorded instance of the death of a redeemed person. If he was the first, then as the redemption of Christ began to dawn before in the souls of men in their conversion and justification, in him it first began to dawn in glorification; and at his death the angels began first to act as ministering spirits to Christ, in going forth to conduct to glory the souls of the redeemed. In him they had the first opportunity to see so wonderful a thing as the soul of one of the fallen race of man, that had been sunk by the fall into such an abyss of sin and misery, brought to heaven, and in the enjoyment of heavenly glory, which was a much greater thing than if they had seen him returned to the earthly paradise. Thus they saw the glorious effect of Christ's redemption, in the great honor and happiness that was procured for sinful, miserable creatures.

V. The next remarkable thing that God did in farther carrying on this great redemption, was the first uncommon *outpouring of the Spirit*, through Christ, in the days of Enos. We read, Gen. 4 : 26,

"Then began men to call upon the name of the Lord." The meaning of these words has been considerably controverted. We cannot suppose the meaning is, that then first men performed the duty of prayer. Prayer is a duty of natural religion, and a duty to which a spirit of piety most naturally leads men. Prayer is the very breath of a spirit of piety; and we cannot suppose that holy men, for above two hundred years, had lived without prayer. Therefore some divines think that the meaning is, that then men first began to perform public worship, or to call upon the name of the Lord in public assemblies. However, thus much must necessarily be understood by it, that there was something *new* in the visible church of God with respect to calling upon the name of the Lord; that there was a great *addition* to the performance of this duty; and that in some respect or other it was carried far beyond what it ever had been before, which must be the consequence of a remarkable outpouring of the Spirit of God.

If it was now first that men were stirred up to meet in assemblies to assist one another in seeking God as they had never done before, it argues something extraordinary as the cause; and could be from nothing but the uncommon influences of God's Spirit, which are always attended with a great increase of prayer. When the Spirit of God begins a work on men's hearts, it immediately inclines them to call on the name of the Lord. As it was with Paul after the Spirit of God had arrested him; "Behold, he prayeth!" so it has been in all remarkable effusions of the Spirit of God recorded in Scripture; and so it will be in the latter days. It is foretold that the

Holy Spirit will be poured out as a spirit of grace and supplication, Zech. 12 : 10. See also Zeph. 3 : 9. "For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the Lord, to serve him with one consent."

And when it is said, "Then *began* men to call upon the name of the Lord," no more can be intended by it than that this was the *first remarkable* season of this nature. It was the beginning of such a work of God. In this manner such an expression is commonly used in Scripture. So 1 Sam. 14 : 35. "And Saul built an altar unto the Lord; the same was the first altar that he built unto the Lord." In the Hebrew it is, as may be seen in the margin, that altar he *began* to build unto the Lord. So Heb. 2 : 3. "How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which first *began* to be spoken by the Lord?"

It may here be observed, that from the fall of man to our day, the work of redemption in its effects has mainly been carried on by remarkable outpourings of the Spirit of God. Though there be a more constant influence of God's Spirit always in some degree attending his ordinances, yet the way in which the greatest things have been done towards carrying on this work, has always been by remarkable effusions at special seasons of mercy, as may fully appear in our further prosecution of the subject. And this in the days of Enos, was the first remarkable outpouring of the Spirit recorded. There had been a saving work of God on the hearts of some before; but now God was pleased to bring in a harvest of souls to Christ; so that in this we see that great building, of which God laid the foundation immedi-

ately after the fall, carried on further, and built higher, than it had been before.

VI. The next thing I notice, is the *eminently holy life of Enoch*, who, we have reason to think, was a saint of greater eminence than any that had been before him; so that in this respect the work of redemption was carried on to a still greater height. With respect to its effect in the visible church in *general*, we observed above, that it was carried higher in the days of Enos than ever before. Probably Enoch was one of the saints of that harvest; for he lived, all the days that he did live on earth, in the days of Enos. And with respect to the *degree* to which this work was carried in the soul of a *particular person*, it was raised to a greater height in Enoch than ever before. His soul, built on Christ, was built up in holiness to a greater height than any preceding him. He was a wonderful instance of Christ's redemption and of the efficacy of his grace.

VII. In Enoch's time, God *more expressly revealed the coming of Christ* than he had before done. Jude, ver. 14, 15. "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him." This prophecy does not seem to be confined to any *particular* coming of Christ; but it has respect in general to Christ's coming in his kingdom. and is fulfilled in a degree in both his first and second coming; and indeed in *every* remarkable

manifestation Christ has made of himself in the world, for the saving of his people and the destruction of his enemies. It is very parallel in this respect with many other prophecies of the Old Testament; and, in particular, with that great prophecy of Christ's coming in his kingdom, whence the Jews principally took their notion of the kingdom of heaven. Daniel, 7 : 10. "A fiery stream issued, and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened." And ver. 13, 14. "I saw in the night visions, and behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed." And though it is not unlikely that Enoch might have a more immediate respect in this prophecy, to the approaching destruction of the old world by the flood, which was a remarkable resemblance of Christ's destruction of all his enemies at his second coming, yet it doubtless looked beyond the type to the antitype.

And as this prophecy of Christ's coming is more express than any preceding it; so it is an instance of the increase of that gospel light which began to dawn presently after the fall.

And here, by the way, I would observe, that the increase of gospel light, and the progress of the work of redemption, as it respects the church in

general, from its erection to the end of the world, is very similar to the progress of the same work, and the same light, in a particular soul, from the time of its conversion till perfected and crowned in glory. Sometimes the light shines brighter, and at other times more obscurely ; sometimes grace prevails, at other times it seems to languish for a great while together ; now corruption prevails, and then grace revives again. But in general grace is growing : from its commencement till perfected in glory, the kingdom of Christ is building up in the soul. So it is with the great work of redemption generally, as it is carried on from its first beginning till it is perfected at the end of the world.

VIII. The next remarkable thing in carrying on this work, was the *translation of Enoch* into heaven. "And Enoch walked with God, and he was not ; for God took him." Gen. 5 : 24. Moses, in giving an account of the genealogy of those that were of the line of Noah, does not say concerning Enoch, he lived so long and he died, as he does of the rest : but, "he was not, for God took him : " he translated him ; in body and soul carried him to heaven without dying, as it is explained, Heb. 11 : 5. "By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death." By this wonderful work of God the work of redemption was carried to a greater height, in several respects, than it had been before.

When showing what were the great things God intended in the work of redemption, I mentioned among others, the perfect restoration of the ruins of the fall, with respect to the elect, both in soul and body. This translation of Enoch was the first instance of restoration with respect to the *body*. There

had been many instances of restoring the *soul* of man by Christ's redemption, but none of redeeming and actually saving the body, till now. At the end of the world, all the *bodies* of the saints shall actually be redeemed; those that shall be dead, by a resurrection; and others, that shall then be living, by causing them to undergo a glorious change. A number of the bodies of saints were raised and glorified at the resurrection of Christ; and before that there was an instance of a body glorified in Elijah. But the first instance of all was this of Enoch.

By this the work of redemption was carried on still further; as thereby God afforded a great increase of gospel light to the church, a clearer manifestation of a future state, and of the glorious reward of the saints in heaven. We are told, 2 Tim. 1 : 10, "That life and immortality are brought to light by the Gospel." What was said in the Old Testament of a future state, is very obscure, in comparison with the more full, plain, and abundant revelation of it in the New. But yet, even in those early days, the church of God, in this instance, was favored with an evidence of it set before their eyes, in that one of their brethren was actually taken up to heaven without dying; which we have reason to think the church of God knew then, as they afterwards knew Elijah's translation. And as this was a clearer manifestation of a future state than the church had enjoyed before, so it was a pledge or earnest of that future glorification of all the saints which God intended through the redemption of Jesus Christ.

IX. The next thing I observe, was the *upholding of the church of God in that family from which Christ was to proceed*, during that great and gene-

ral defection which preceded the flood. The church of God, in all probability, was small, in comparison with the rest of the world, from the time that mankind began to multiply ; or from the time (Gen. 4 : 16) " when Cain went out from the presence of the Lord and dwelt in the land of Nod ; which, being interpreted, is the land of *banishment*. The church seems to have been continued chiefly in the posterity of Seth ; for this was the seed that God appointed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew. But we cannot reasonably suppose that Seth's posterity were one fiftieth part of the world ; for Adam was one hundred and thirty years old when Seth was born. But Cain, who seems to have been the leader of those that were not of the church, was Adam's eldest child, and probably was born soon after the fall, which doubtless was soon after Adam's creation ; so that there was time for Cain to have many sons before Seth was born ; besides many other children that probably Adam and Eve had before this time, agreeably to God's blessing, " Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth ;" and many of these children might have children. The history of Cain before Seth was born, seems to imply that there were great numbers of men on the earth. Gen. 4 : 14, 15. " Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth : and from thy face shall I be hid, and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth : and it shall come to pass, that every one that findeth me shall slay me. And the Lord said unto him, Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him." And all who existed when Seth was born, must be supposed to stand in



equal capacity of multiplying their posterity with him ; and thus Seth's posterity were probably but a small part of the inhabitants of the world.

But after the days of Enos and Enoch, (for Enoch was translated before Enos died) the church of God greatly diminished, in proportion as multitudes of the line of Seth, born in the church of God, fell away, and joined with the wicked world, principally by means of intermarriages with them ; as Gen. 6 : 1, 2, 4. " And it came to pass, when men began to multiply upon the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were fair ; and they took them wives of all which they chose.—There were giants in the earth in those days ; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men, which were of old men of renown." By the *sons of God* here are doubtless meant the children of the church. It is a denomination often given them in Scripture. They intermarried with the wicked world, and so had their hearts led away from God ; and there was a great and continual defection. The church, that used to be a restraint on the wicked world, diminished exceedingly, and so wickedness prevailed. Satan, that old serpent the devil, that tempted our first parents, and set up himself as the God of this world, raged exceedingly ; every imagination of the thoughts of man's heart was only evil continually, and the earth was filled with violence. It seems to have been deluged with wickedness then, as it was with water afterwards : and mankind in general were swallowed up in it. And now Satan made a most violent attempt to devour

the church of God ; and had almost done it. But yet God preserved it, in the midst of all this flood of wickedness and violence, in that line of which Christ was to proceed. He would not suffer it to be destroyed, for a blessing was in it. There was a particular family, a root whence the branch of righteousness was afterwards to shoot forth. And therefore, however the branches were lopped off, and the tree seemed to be destroyed, yet God in the midst of all kept alive this root, by his wonderful redeeming power and grace, so that the gates of hell could not prevail against it.

Thus I have shown how God carried on the great work of redemption during this first period, from the fall of man till God brought the flood on the earth. And I would observe, that though the Mosaic history during that space be very short, yet it is exceedingly comprehensive and instructive. And it may also be profitable here to observe, the efficacy of that purchase of redemption which had such great effects so many ages before Christ actually appeared.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### FROM THE FLOOD TO THE CALLING OF ABRAHAM.

I proceed now to show how the same work was carried on *from the beginning of the flood till the calling of Abraham*. For though that universal deluge overthrew the world, it did not overthrow this

building of God, the work of redemption. This went on; and instead of being overthrown, continued to be built up, in order to a further preparation for the great Savior's coming into the world for the redemption of his people.

I. The *flood itself* was a work of God that belonged to this great design, and tended to promote it. All the mighty works of God, from the fall to the end of the world, rightly viewed, will appear as parts of this grand work, and so many steps for carrying it on; and doubtless so great a work, so remarkable and universal a catastrophe, as the deluge, cannot be excepted. Thereby God removed out of the way the enemies and obstacles that were ready to overthrow it.

Satan seems to have been in a dreadful rage just before the flood, and his rage then doubtless was, as it always has been, chiefly against the church of God to overthrow it; and he had filled the earth with violence and rage against it. He had drawn over almost all the world to be enlisted under his banner against Christ and his church. We read, that *the earth was filled with violence*; and doubtless that violence was chiefly against the church, in fulfillment of what was foretold, "I will put enmity between thy seed and her seed." Their enmity and violence were so great, and the enemies of the church so numerous, the whole world being against it, that it was come to the last extremity. Noah's reproofs, and his preaching of righteousness, were utterly disregarded. God's Spirit had striven with them a hundred and twenty years, but all in vain; and the church was reduced to so narrow limits, as to be confined to one family. There was no prospect of

any thing else but of their totally swallowing up the church, and that in a very little time ; and so wholly destroying that small root that had the blessing in it, or whence the Redeemer was to proceed.

And, therefore, God's destroying those enemies of the church by the flood, belongs to this design of redemption ; for it was one thing that was done in fulfillment of the covenant of grace, as it was revealed to Adam : " I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed ; it shall bruise thy head." This was only a destruction of the seed of the serpent in the midst of their utmost violent rage against the seed of the woman, when in the utmost peril.

We scarcely read in Scripture of any destruction of nations, but one main reason given for it is, their enmity and injuries against God's church ; and doubtless this was one main reason of the destruction of all nations by the flood. The giants that were in those days, in all probability got themselves renowned by their great exploits against heaven, and against Christ and his church, the remaining sons of God that had not corrupted themselves.

We read, that just before the world shall be destroyed by fire, " the nations that are in the four quarters of the earth shall gather together against the church as the sand of the sea, and shall go up on the breadth of the earth, and compass the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city ; and then fire shall come down from God out of heaven and devour them." Rev. 20 : 8, 9. And it seems there was what was very parallel to it, just before the world was destroyed by water. And therefore their destruction was a work of God that as much belonged

to the work of redemption, as the destruction of the *Egyptians* belonged to the redemption of the children of Israel out of Egypt, or as the destruction of Sennacherib's mighty army, which had compassed about Jerusalem to destroy it, belonged to God's redemption of that city from them.

By means of this flood, all the enemies of God's church, against whom that little handful had no strength, were swept off at once. God took their part, appeared for them against their enemies, and drowned those of whom they had been afraid, in this flood, as he drowned the enemies of Israel that pursued them in the Red Sea.

Indeed God could have taken other methods to deliver his church: he could have converted all the world instead of drowning it; and so he could have taken another method than drowning the Egyptians in the Red Sea. But that is no argument that the method he did take was not a method to show his redeeming mercy to his people.

By the deluge, the enemies of God's people were dispossessed, and the whole earth given to Noah and his family to possess in quiet; as God made room for the Israelites in Canaan, by casting out their enemies from before them. And God thus taking the possession of the enemies of the church, and giving it all to his people, was agreeable to that promise of the covenant of grace, Ps. 37:9-11. "For evil doers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the Lord, they shall inherit the earth. For yet a little while and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be. But the meek shall inherit the earth, and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace."

II. Another thing belonging to the same work, was God's wonderfully *preserving that family of which the Redeemer was to proceed, when all the rest of the world was drowned*. God's drowning the world, and saving Noah and his family, had both respect to this great work. The saving of Noah and his family belonged to it, in two respects: as from that family the Redeemer was to proceed, and that family was the church, the mystical body of Christ. The manner of saving those persons, when all the world besides was so overthrown, was very wonderful. It was a remarkable type of the redemption of Christ, of that redemption sealed by the baptism of water, and so spoken of in the New Testament, as 1 Pet. 3: 20, 21. "Which sometimes were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls, were saved by water. The like figure whereunto, even baptism, doth also now save us, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ." That water which washed away the filth of the world, that cleared the world of wicked men, was a type of the blood of Christ, that takes away the sin of the world. That water which delivered Noah and his sons from their enemies, is a type of the blood that delivers God's church from their sins, their worst enemies. That water which was so abundant that it filled the world and reached above the tops of the highest mountains, was a type of that blood, which is sufficient for the whole world—sufficient to bury the highest mountains of sin. The ark, that was the refuge and hiding-place of the church

in this time of storm and flood, was a type of Christ, the true hiding-place of the church from the storms and floods of God's wrath.

III. The next thing I observe is, the *new grant* of the earth God made to Noah and his family immediately after the flood, as founded on the covenant of grace. The sacrifice of Christ was represented by Noah's building an altar to the Lord, and offering a sacrifice of every clean beast, and every clean fowl. And we have an account of God's accepting this sacrifice: and thereupon he blessed Noah, and established his covenant with him, and with his seed, promising to destroy the earth in like manner no more; signifying that it is by the sacrifice of Christ God's favor is obtained, and his people are in safety from destroying judgments, and have the blessing of the Lord. And God now, on occasion of this sacrifice that Noah offered, gives him and his posterity a new grant of the earth; a new power of dominion over the creatures, as founded on that sacrifice, and so on the covenant of grace. And thus it is to be regarded as a distinct grant from that grant of the earth which was made to Adam, Gen. 1:28. "And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth." That grant was not founded on the covenant of *grace*; for it was given to Adam while he was under the covenant of *works*, and therefore was rendered void when that covenant ceased. Hence it came to pass that the earth was taken away from mankind by the flood; for the first grant was forfeited, and God had never made

another after that, till after the flood. If the first covenant had not been broken, God never would have drowned the world, and so have taken it away from mankind; for then the first grant would have stood good. But that being broken, God, after a while, destroyed the earth, when the wickedness of man was great.

But after the flood, on Noah's offering a sacrifice that represented the sacrifice of Christ, God, in smelling a sweet savor, or accepting the sacrifice—as it was a representation of the true sacrifice of Christ, which is a sweet savor indeed to God—gives Noah a new grant of the earth, founded on that covenant of grace which is by the sacrifice of Christ, with a promise annexed, that now the earth should no more be destroyed till the consummation of all things. Gen. 8 : 20–22. and chap. 9 : 1–7. The reason why such a promise, that God would no more destroy the earth, was added to this grant made to Noah, and not to that made to Adam, was that this was founded on the covenant of grace, of which Christ was the surety, and therefore could not be broken. And hence it comes to pass now, that though the wickedness of man has dreadfully raged, and the earth been filled with violence and wickedness, one age after another, and much more dreadful and aggravated wickedness, being against so much greater light and mercy, especially in these days of the Gospel: yet God's patience holds out: he does not destroy the earth: his mercy and forbearance abide according to his promise: and his grant established with Noah and his sons remains firm and good, being founded on the covenant of grace.

IV. On this God *renews with Noah and his sons*



*the covenant of grace*, Gen. 9:9, 10. "And I, behold I, establish my covenant with you, and with your seed after you, and with every living creature that is with you," &c.; which was the covenant of grace; of which even the brute creation have this benefit, that the earth shall never be destroyed again until the consummation of all things. By this expression in Scripture, *my covenant*, is commonly to be understood the covenant of grace. The manner of expression, "I will establish my covenant with you, and with your seed after you," shows plainly that it was a covenant already in being, and that Noah would understand by that denomination the covenant of grace.

V. God's disappointing the design of building the *city and tower of Babel* belongs to the great work of redemption; for that was undertaken in opposition to this great building of God. Men's going about to build such a city and tower, was an effect of the corruption into which mankind were now fallen. This city and tower were set up in opposition to the city of God, as the god to whom they built it was their pride. Being sunk into a disposition to forsake the true God, the first idol they set up in his room was their own fame. And as this city and tower had their foundation in the pride and vanity of men, and the haughtiness of their minds, so it was built on a foundation exceedingly contrary to the nature of the kingdom of Christ, and his redeemed city, which has its foundation in humility.

God saw that it tended to frustrate the design of that great building which was founded in Christ's blood; and therefore the thing displeased the Lord, and he baffled and confounded the design; as God

will frustrate and confound all other designs, formed in opposition to the great work of redemption.

Isaiah, (chap. 2,) representing God setting up the kingdom of Christ in the world, foretells how, in order to it, he will bring down the haughtiness of men, and how the day of the Lord shall be on *every high tower*, and upon *every fenced wall*, &c. Christ's kingdom is established, by bringing down every high thing to make way for it. 2 Cor. 10 : 4, 5. "For the weapons of our warfare are mighty, through God, to the pulling down of strong holds, casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God." What is done in a particular soul, to make way for the setting up of Christ's kingdom, is to destroy Babel in that soul.

They intended to have built Babel up to heaven. That building of which we speak shall reach to heaven indeed, the highest heavens, at the end of the world, when it shall be finished; and therefore God would not suffer the building of his enemies, in opposition to it, to prosper. If they had prospered in building that city and tower, it might have kept the world of wicked men, the enemies of the church, together, as was their design. They might have remained united in one vast, powerful city; and so have been too powerful for the city of God.

This Babel is the same with the city of Babylon; for Babylon in the original is Babel. But Babylon is always spoken of in Scripture as chiefly opposite to the city of God, as a powerful and terrible enemy, notwithstanding this great check put to the building of it in the beginning. But it probably would have been vastly more powerful, and able to vex, if not to destroy the church of God, if it had not been thus checked.

VI. The *dispersing of the nations*, and dividing the earth among its inhabitants, immediately after God had caused the building of Babel to cease. This was done so as most to suit the great design of redemption. And particularly, God therein had an eye to the future propagation of the Gospel among the nations. They were so placed, their habitation so limited, round about the land of Canaan, as most suited that design. Deut. 32: 8. "When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel." Acts, 17: 26, 27. "And hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might find him." The land of Canaan was situated the most conveniently of any place in the world, for the purpose of spreading revealed light among the nations in general. The Roman empire, the chief part of the civilized world, in the apostolic age, was in the countries round about Jerusalem. The devil seeing the advantage of this situation of the nations for promoting the great work of redemption, and the disadvantage of it with respect to the interests of his kingdom, afterwards led away many nations into the remotest parts of the world, to get them out of the way of the Gospel. Thus he led some into America; and others into cold northern regions, almost inaccessible.

VII. Another thing I would mention in this period, was God's *preserving the true religion in that line from which Christ was to proceed*, when the

world in general apostatized to idolatry, and the church was in imminent danger of being swallowed up in the general corruption. Though God had lately wrought so wonderfully for the deliverance of his church, and had shown so great mercy towards it, as for its sake even to destroy all the rest of the world; and though he had lately renewed and established his covenant of grace with Noah and his sons; yet so prone is the corrupt heart of man to depart from God, and to sink into the depths of wickedness, darkness, and delusion, that the world soon after the flood fell into gross idolatry; so that before Abraham it was almost universal. The earth had become very corrupt at the time of the building of Babel: even God's people themselves, that line of which Christ was to come, were corrupted in a measure with idolatry. Josh. 24 : 2. "Your fathers dwelt on the other side of the flood in old time, even Terah the father of Abraham, and the father of Nahor; and *they served other gods.*" "The other side of the flood" means beyond the river Euphrates, where the ancestors of Abraham lived.

We are not to understand that they were *wholly* drawn off to idolatry, to forsake the true God. For God is said to be the God of Nahor. Gen. 31 : 53. "The God of Abraham, and the God of Nahor, the God of their father, judge betwixt us." But they partook in some measure of the general and almost universal corruption of the times; as Solomon was in a measure infected with idolatrous corruption; and as the children of Israel in Egypt are said to serve other gods, though there was the true church of God among them; and as there were images kept for a considerable time in the family

of Jacob; the corruption being brought from Padan-Aram, whence he obtained his wives.

This was the second time that the church was almost brought to nothing by the corruption and general defection of the world from true religion. But still the true religion was continued in the family from which Christ was to proceed; which is another instance of God's remarkably preserving his church in a time of a general deluge of wickedness; and wherein, though the god of this world raged, and had almost swallowed up God's church, yet he did not suffer the gates of hell to prevail against it.

---

## CHAPTER III.

### FROM THE CALLING OF ABRAHAM TO MOSES.

I. It pleased God now to *separate that person of whom Christ was to come*, from the rest of the world, that his church might be upheld in his family and posterity till that time. He called Abraham out of his own country and from his kindred, to go into a distant country that God should show him; and brought him first out of Ur of the Chaldees to Charran, and then to the land of Canaan.

It was before observed, that the corruption of the world with idolatry was now become general; mankind were almost wholly overrun with it. God therefore saw it necessary, in order to uphold true religion in the world, that there should be a family separated from all others, lest the church of Christ

should wholly be carried away with the apostacy. For Abraham's own country and kindred had most of them fallen off; and without some extraordinary interposition of Providence, it seemed that, in a generation or two more, the true religion in this line would have been extinct. And therefore God called Abraham, the person in whose family he intended to uphold the true religion, out of his own country, and from his kindred, to a far distant country, that his posterity might there remain a people separate from all the rest of the world; that so the true religion might be upheld there, while all mankind besides were swallowed up in Heathenism.

The land of the Chaldees, whence Abraham was called, was the country about Babel: Babel, or Babylon, being the chief city of Chaldea. Learned men suppose, that it was in this land idolatry first began; that Babel and Chaldea were the original and chief seats of the worship of idols, whence it spread into other nations. And therefore the land of the Chaldeans, the country of Babylon, is in Scripture called *the land of graven images*. Jer. 50:35, 38. "A sword is upon the Chaldeans, saith the Lord, and upon the inhabitants of Babylon, and upon her princes, and upon her wise men. A drought is upon her waters, and they shall be dried up; for it is the land of graven images, and they are mad upon their idols." God calls Abraham out of this idolatrous country, to a great distance from it; and when he came there, "he gave him no inheritance in it, no, not so much as to set his foot on;" but he remained a stranger and a sojourner, that he and his family might be kept separate from all the world.

This was a new thing: God had never taken

such a method before. His church had not in this manner been separated from the rest of the world till now; but were wont to dwell with them, the mischievous consequences of which had been found repeatedly. Before the flood the effect of God's people living intermingled with the wicked world, without any remarkable wall of separation, was, that the sons of the church joined in marriage with others, and thereby almost all soon became infected, and the church was almost brought to nothing. The method God then took to protect the church was, to drown the wicked world, and save the church in the ark. Before Abraham was called, the world had again become corrupt. But now God took another method; he did not destroy the wicked world, and save Abraham, and his wife, and Lot, but called these persons to go and live separate from the rest of the world.

This was a new and great thing that God did towards the work of redemption. It was about the middle of the space of time between the fall of man and the coming of Christ; about two thousand years before the great Redeemer was to appear. But by this calling of Abraham, the ancestor of Christ, a foundation was laid for upholding the church in the world till Christ should come. For the world having become idolatrous, there was a necessity in order to this, that the seed of the woman should be thus separated from it.

And then it was needful that there should be a particular *nation* separated from the rest of the world, to receive the types and prophecies that were to be given of Christ, to prepare the way for his coming; that to them might be committed the ora-

cles of God; that by them the history of God's great works of creation and providence might be preserved; that Christ might be born of this nation; and that from hence the light of the Gospel might shine forth to the rest of the world. These ends could not well be obtained, if God's people, through all these two thousand years, had lived intermixed with the heathen world. So that the call of Abraham may be looked upon as a kind of new foundation laid for the visible church of God, in a more distinct and regular state. Abraham, being the person in whom this foundation is laid, is represented in Scripture as though he were the father of all the church, the father of all them that believe; a root whence the visible church rose as a tree, distinct from all others. Of this tree Christ was the branch of righteousness; and from it, after Christ came, the natural branches were broken off, and the Gentiles grafted in. So that Abraham still remains, through Christ, the father, the root of the church. It is the same tree which, from that small beginning in Abraham's time, has in these days of the Gospel spread its branches over a great part of the earth, will fill the whole in due time, and at the end of the world shall be transplanted from an earthly soil into the paradise of God.

II. There accompanied this *a more particular and full revelation and confirmation of the covenant of grace* than ever before. There had been before this two particular and solemn editions or confirmations of this covenant; one, to our first parents, soon after the fall; the other to Noah and his family, soon after the flood. And now there is a third, at and after the calling of Abraham. It was now re-



vealed to Abraham, not only that Christ should come, but that he should be his seed; and promised that all the families of the earth should be blessed in him. And God repeated the promises of this to Abraham. The first promise was when he first called him. Gen. 12:2. "And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing." The same promise was renewed after he came into the land of Canaan. Chap. 13:14, &c. Again after Abraham had returned from the slaughter of the kings. Chap. 15:5, 6. And a fourth time after his offering up Isaac. Chap. 22:16-18.

In this renewal of the covenant of grace with Abraham, several particulars concerning it were revealed more fully than before: not only that Christ was to be of Abraham's seed, but also the calling of the Gentiles, that all nations should be brought into the church, all the families of the earth be blessed. And then the great condition of the covenant of grace, which is faith, was now more fully made known. Gen. 15:5, 6. "And he said unto him, So shall thy seed be. And Abraham believed in the Lord; and he counted it to him for righteousness;" which is much noticed in the New Testament, as that for which Abraham was called the father of believers.

And as there was now a further revelation of the covenant of grace, so there was a further confirmation of it by seals and pledges; particularly circumcision, which was a seal of the covenant of grace, as appears by the first institution of it. Gen. 17. It there appears to be a seal of that covenant by which God promised to make Abraham a father of many

nations. Ver. 5, 9, 10. And we are expressly taught, that it was "a seal of the righteousness of faith." Rom. 4:11. Speaking of Abraham, the apostle says, "he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of faith."

Abraham's family and posterity must be kept separate from the rest of the world till Christ should come; and this sacrament was the principal wall of separation. Besides, God gave Abraham a remarkable pledge of the fulfillment of the promise he had made him, in his victory over Chedorlaomer and the kings that were with him. Chedorlaomer seems to have reigned over a great part of the world at that day; and though he had his seat at Elam, perhaps a thousand miles from the land of Canaan, yet he extended his empire so as to reign over many parts of the land of Canaan, as appears by chap. 14: 4, 5, 6, 7. It is supposed by learned men, that he was a king of the Assyrian empire at that day, which had been begun by Nimrod at Babel. And as it was the honor of kings in those days to build cities for the seat of their empire, (Gen. 10: 10-12,) so it is conjectured that he had gone forth and built him a city in Elam, and made that his seat; and that those other kings who came with him, were his deputies in the several cities and countries where they reigned. But yet, as mighty an empire as he had, and as great an army as he came with, Abraham, only with his trained servants, that were born in his house, conquered and subdued them all. 'This he received of God as a pledge of what he had promised: the victory that Christ his seed should obtain over the nations of the earth, whereby he should possess the gates of his enemies. It is plainly

spoken of as such in the 41st of Isaiah, where is foretold the future glorious victory the church shall obtain over the nations of the world. This victory of Abraham is spoken of as a pledge and earnest of victory to the church. "Who raised up the righteous man from the east, called him to his foot, gave the nations before him, and made him rule over kings? He gave them as the dust to his sword, and as driven stubble to his bow. He pursued them, and passed safely; even by the way that he had not gone with his feet."

Another remarkable confirmation Abraham received of the covenant of grace, was when he returned from the slaughter of the kings; when Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, that great type of Christ, met him, and blessed him, and brought forth bread and wine. The bread and wine signified the same blessings of the covenant of grace, that the bread and wine does in the Lord's supper.\*\* And Melchisedec's coming to meet him with such a seal of the covenant of grace, on the occasion of this victory, evinces that it was a pledge of God's fulfillment of the same covenant. Gen. 14: 19, 20.

Another confirmation of the covenant of grace, was the vision he had, in the deep sleep that fell upon him, of the smoking furnace, and burning lamp, that passed between the parts of the sacrifice. Gen. 15. The sacrifice signified that of Christ. The smoking furnace that first passed through the midst of that sacrifice, signified the sufferings of Christ. But the burning lamp that followed, which shone with a clear bright light, signifies the glory that followed Christ's sufferings, and was procured by them.

Another remarkable pledge that God gave Abraham of the fulfillment of the covenant of grace, was his giving that child of whom Christ was to come, in his old age; (Heb. 11 : 11, 12, and Rom. 4 : 18, &c.) and his delivering Isaac, after he was laid upon the wood of the sacrifice to be slain. This was a confirmation of Abraham's faith in the promise that God had made of Christ, that he should be of Isaac's posterity; and was a representation of the resurrection of Christ. Heb. 11 : 17-19. And because this was given as a confirmation of the covenant of grace, therefore God renewed that covenant with Abraham on this occasion. Gen. 24 : 15, &c.

Thus it appears how much more fully the covenant of grace was revealed and confirmed in Abraham's time than ever it had been before; by means of which Abraham seems to have had a clear view of Christ the great Redeemer, and the future things that were to be accomplished by him. And therefore Christ informs us that "Abraham rejoiced to see his day, and he saw it, and was glad." John, 8 : 56. So great an advance did it please God now to make in this building, which he had been carrying on from the beginning of the world.

III. The next thing is God's *preserving the patriarchs* for so long a time in the midst of the wicked inhabitants of Canaan, and from all other enemies. The patriarchs, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, were those of whom Christ was to proceed; and they were now separated from the world, that in them his church might be upheld. Therefore, in preserving them, the great design of redemption was carried on. He preserved them, and kept the inhabitants of the land where they sojourned from de-

stroying them; which was a remarkable dispensation of Providence. For the inhabitants of the land were at that day very wicked, though they grew more wicked afterwards. This appears by Gen. 15: 16. "In the fourth generation they shall come hither again; for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full:" as much as to say, though it be very great, it is not yet full. And their great wickedness also appears by Abraham and Isaac's aversion to their children marrying any of the daughters of the land. Abraham, when he was old, could not be content till he had made his servant swear that he would not take a wife for his son of the daughters of the land. And Isaac and Rebecca were content to send away Jacob to so great a distance as Padan-Aram, to take him a wife. And when Esau married some of the daughters of the land, we are told that they were "a grief of mind to Isaac and Rebecca."

Another argument of their great wickedness, was the instances we have in Sodom and Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboim, which were some of the cities of Canaan, though they were probably the most notoriously wicked, and likely to have the most bitter enmity against these holy men; agreeable to what was declared at first, "I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed." Their holy lives were a continual condemnation of the prevailing wickedness. They must have been often reproving such wickedness, as we find Lot was in Sodom; who, we are told, vexed his righteous soul with their unlawful deeds, and was to them a preacher of righteousness.

And they were the more exposed to them, being

strangers and sojourners in the land, and having as yet no inheritance there. Men are more apt to find fault with strangers, and to be irritated by any thing in them that offends, as they were with Lot in Sodom. He very gently reprov'd their wickedness; and they say upon it, "This fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a ruler and a judge;" and threatened what they would do to him.

But God wonderfully preserved Abraham and Lot, Isaac and Jacob, and their families, amongst them, though they were few in number, and they might quickly have destroyed them; which is noticed as a wonderful instance of God's preserving mercy towards his church. Psalm 105 : 12-15. "When they were but a few men in number; yea, very few, and strangers in it. When they went from one nation to another, from one kingdom to another people. He suffered no man to do them wrong; yea, he reprov'd kings for their sakes, saying, 'Touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm.'"

This preservation was in some instances very remarkable, when the people of the land were very greatly irritated and provoked; as by Simeon and Levi's treatment of the Shechemites, Gen. 34 : 30, &c. God strangely preserved Jacob and his family, restraining the provoked people by an unusual terror on their minds. "And the terror of God was upon the cities that were round about them, and they did not pursue after the sons of Jacob." Gen. 35 : 5.

And God preserved them not only from the Canaanites, but from all others that intended mischief to them. He preserved Jacob and his company when pursued by Laban, full of rage, and a disposition to

overtake him as an enemy. God met him, rebuked him, and said to him, "Take heed that thou speak not to Jacob, either good or bad." How wonderfully did he also preserve him from Esau his brother, when he came forth with an army, with a full design to cut him off! How did God, in answer to his prayer, when Jacob wrestled with Christ at Penuel, wonderfully turn Esau's heart, and make him, instead of meeting him as an enemy with slaughter and destruction, meet him as a friend and brother, doing him no harm!

Thus was this handful, this little root that had the blessing of the Redeemer in it, preserved in the midst of enemies and dangers; which was not unlike preserving the ark in the midst of the tempestuous deluge.

IV. The next thing I mention is the awful *destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah*, and the neighboring cities. This promoted the great work designed in two ways:

First, it tended powerfully to restrain the inhabitants of the land from injuring those holy strangers that God had brought to sojourn amongst them. Lot was one of those strangers; he came into the land with Abraham; and Sodom was destroyed for their abusive disregard of Lot, the preacher of righteousness. And their destruction came upon their committing a most injurious and abominable insult on Lot, and the strangers that were come into his house, even those angels, whom they probably took to be some of Lot's former acquaintance come to visit him. They in a most outrageous manner beset Lot's house, intending a monstrous abuse of those strangers, and threatening to serve Lot worse than

them. But in the midst of this God smote them with blindness; and the next morning the city and the country about it was overthrown in a most terrible storm of fire and brimstone. This dreadful destruction was in the sight of the rest of the inhabitants of the land, and doubtless struck a dread and terror on their minds, and made them afraid to hurt those holy strangers; and probably was one principal means of restraining them, and preserving the patriarchs. When the reason is given, why the inhabitants of the land did not pursue after Jacob, in their provocation by the destruction of the Shechemites, that *the terror of the Lord was upon them*, it is very probable this was the terror referred to. They remembered the amazing destruction of Sodom, and the cities of the plain, that came upon them for their abusive treatment of Lot, and so durst not hurt Jacob and his family.

Another way that this awful destruction tended to promote the great work of redemption, was, that hereby God remarkably exhibited the *terrors of his law*, to make men sensible of their need of redeeming mercy. The work of redemption never was carried on without this. The law, from the beginning, is made use of as a schoolmaster to bring men to Christ.

But under the Old Testament there was much more need of some extraordinary, visible, and sensible manifestation of God's wrath against sin, than in the days of the Gospel, since a future state, and the eternal misery of hell, is more clearly revealed, and the awful justice of God against the sins of men has been so wonderfully displayed in the sufferings of Christ. And therefore the revelation God gave



of himself in those days, used to be accompanied with much more terror. So when God appeared at Mount Sinai to give the law, it was with thunders and lightning, and a thick cloud, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud. Some external, awful manifestations of God's wrath against sin, were on some accounts especially necessary before the giving of the law : and before the flood, the terrors of the law handed down by tradition from Adam served for that purpose. Adam lived nine hundred and thirty years himself, to proclaim God's awful threatenings denounced in the covenant made with him, and how dreadful were the consequences of the fall ; and others, that conversed with Adam, lived till the flood. The destruction of the world by the flood served to exhibit the terrors of the law, and manifest the wrath of God against sin ; in order to make men sensible of the absolute necessity of redeeming mercy. And some that saw the flood were alive in Abraham's time.

But this was now in a great measure forgotten ; therefore God was pleased again, in a most amazing manner, to show his wrath against sin, in the destruction of these cities ; which was the liveliest image of hell ever exhibited, and hence the apostle Jude says, they "suffer the vengeance of eternal fire." Jude, 7. God rained storms of fire and brimstone upon them ; probably by thick flashes of lightning. The streams of brimstone burned up all these cities ; so that they perished in the flames of divine wrath. By this might be seen the dreadful wrath of God against the ungodliness and unrighteousness of men ; which tended to show the neces-

sity of redemption, and so to promote that great work.

V. God again *renewed and confirmed the covenant of grace to Isaac and to Jacob*. To Isaac in these words; Gen. 26 : 3, 4; "And I will perform the oath which I swore unto Abraham thy father; and I will make thy seed to multiply as the stars of heaven, and will give unto thy seed all these countries; and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed." And afterwards to Jacob; first, in Isaac's blessing him and his seed, wherein he acted and spoke by extraordinary divine direction. Gen. 27 : 29. "Let people serve thee, and many nations bow down to thee; be lord over thy brethren, and let thy mother's sons bow down to thee; cursed be every one that curseth thee, and blessed be he that blesseth thee." And therefore Esau, in losing this blessing, failed of being blessed as an heir of the benefits of the covenant of grace.

This covenant was again renewed and confirmed to Jacob at Bethel, in his vision of the ladder that reached to heaven; which was a symbol of the way of salvation by Christ. The stone that Jacob rested on was a type of Christ, the stone of Israel, on which the spiritual Israel rests; as is evident, because it was anointed, and made use of as an altar. But we know that Christ is the anointed of God, and is the only true altar. While Jacob was resting on this stone, and saw this ladder, God appears to him as his covenant God, and renews the covenant of grace with him, as in Gen. 28 : 14. "And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth; and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north,

and to the south; and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed."

Jacob had another remarkable confirmation of this covenant at Penuel, where he wrestled with God, and prevailed; where Christ appeared to him in the form of that nature which he was afterwards to receive into a personal union with his divine nature. And God renewed his covenant with him again, after he left Padan-Aram, and was come up to Bethel, where he had the vision of the ladder. Gen. 35: 10, &c.

Thus the covenant of grace was now renewed much oftener than it had been before. The light of the Gospel now began to shine much brighter as the time of Christ's appearing grew nearer.

VI. The next thing I would observe, is God's remarkably *preserving the family of which Christ was to proceed from perishing by famine*, by the instrumentality of Joseph. When there was a seven years' famine approaching, God was pleased, by a wonderful providence, to send Joseph into Egypt, there to provide for Jacob and his family, and to keep the holy seed alive, which otherwise would have perished. Joseph was sent into Egypt for that end, as he observes, Gen. 50: 20, "But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to save much people alive." How often had this holy root, that had in it the future branch of righteousness, the glorious Redeemer, been in danger of being destroyed! But God wonderfully preserved it.

This salvation of the house of Israel, by the hand of Joseph, was upon some accounts very much a resemblance of the salvation of Christ. The children of Israel were saved by Joseph, their kinsman and

brother, from perishing by famine ; as he who saves the souls of the spiritual Israel from spiritual famine is their near kinsman, and one that is not ashamed to call them brethren. Joseph was a brother they had hated, sold, and as it were killed ; for they had designed to kill him. So Christ is one whom we naturally hate, and by our wicked lives have sold for the vain things of the world, and by our sins have slain. Joseph was first in a state of humiliation ; he was a servant, as Christ appeared in the form of a servant ; and then was cast into a dungeon, as Christ descended into the grave. When he rose out of the dungeon, he was in a state of great exaltation at the king's right hand as his deputy, to reign over all his kingdom, to provide food, to preserve life. So Christ was exalted at God's right hand to be a Prince and a Savior to his brethren, received gifts for men, even for the rebellious, them that had hated and sold him.

VII. After this was *a prophecy of Christ*, in Jacob's blessing his son Judah, which was *more particular than any before*, as it showed of whose posterity he was to be. When God called Abraham, it was revealed that he was to be of Abraham's posterity. Before, we have no account of any revelation concerning Christ's pedigree confined to narrower limits than the posterity of Noah. After this it was confined to still narrower limits ; for though Abraham had many sons, yet it was revealed that Christ was to be of Isaac's posterity. And then it was limited still more ; for when Isaac had two sons, it was revealed that Christ was to be of Israel's posterity. And now, though Israel had twelve sons, yet it is revealed that Christ should be of Judah's

posterity. Christ is the Lion of the tribe of Judah. Respect is chiefly had to his great acts, when it is said here, Gen. 49 : 8, 9, "Judah, thou art he whom thy brethren shall praise : thy hand shall be in the neck of thy enemies ; thy father's children shall bow down before thee. Judah is a lion's whelp ; from the prey, my son, thou art gone up : he stooped down, he couched as a lion, and as an old lion ; who shall rouse him up ?" And then this prediction is more particular concerning the time of Christ's coming, as in verse 10. "The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come ; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be." The prophecy here, of the calling of the Gentiles consequent on Christ's coming, seems to be more plain than any had yet been, in the expression, "to him shall the gathering of the people be." Thus it appears how that gospel light which dawned immediately after the fall of man, gradually increases.

VIII. The work of redemption was carried on in this period, in God's wonderfully *preserving the children of Israel in Egypt*, when the power of Egypt was engaged utterly to destroy them. They seemed to be wholly in the hands of the Egyptians ; they were their servants, and were subject to the power of Pharaoh, who set himself to weaken them with hard bondage. And when he saw that did not succeed, he set himself to extirpate the race, by commanding that every male child should be drowned. But after all that Pharaoh could do, God wonderfully preserved them ; and not only so, but increased them exceedingly ; so that, instead of being extirpated, they greatly multiplied.

IX. Here is to be observed, not only the preservation of the nation, but God's wonderfully *preserving and upholding his invisible church in that nation*, when in danger of being overwhelmed in the idolatry of Egypt. The children of Israel being long among the Egyptians, and servants under them, and so not having advantages to keep God's ordinances among themselves, and maintain any public worship or instruction, whereby the true religion might be upheld; and there being now no written word, they by degrees, in a great measure, lost the true religion, and borrowed the idolatry of Egypt; and the greater part of the people fell away to the worship of their gods. See Ezek. 20 : 6-8; 23 : 8.

This now was the third time that God's church was almost swallowed up and carried away with the wickedness of the world: once before the flood; the second time, before the calling of Abraham; and now in Egypt. But yet God did not suffer his church to be quite overwhelmed: he still saved it, like the ark in the flood, and as he saved Moses in the midst of the waters, in an ark of bulrushes, where he was in the utmost danger of being swallowed up. The true religion was still preserved by some, and God had still a people among them, even in this miserable, corrupt, and dark time. The parents of Moses were true servants of God, as we learn by Heb. 11 : 23. "By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw that he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment."

I have now shown how the work of redemption was carried on from the calling of Abraham to Moses; in which we have seen many great things

done towards this work, and a great advancement of this building, beyond what had preceded.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### FROM MOSES TO DAVID.

I. The first thing that offers itself here is the *redemption of the church of God out of Egypt*; the most remarkable of all the Old Testament redemptions, the greatest pledge and forerunner of the future redemption by Christ, and much more insisted on in Scripture than any other. It was the greatest type of Christ's redemption of any providential event whatsoever. This was by Jesus Christ, who appeared to Moses in the bush, and sent him to redeem that people, as is evident from his being called the *Angel of the Lord*, *Exod. 3:2, 3*. The bush represented the human nature of Christ, who is called the *branch*. This bush grew on Mount Sinai or Horeb, a word which signifies a dry place, as the human nature of Christ was a root out of dry ground. The bush burning with fire represented the sufferings of Christ in the fire of God's wrath. It burned, and was not consumed: so Christ, though he suffered extremely, yet perished not, but overcame at last, and rose from his sufferings. Because this great mystery of the incarnation and sufferings of Christ was here represented, therefore Moses says, "I will turn aside, and

behold this great sight." A great sight he might well call it, when there was represented *God manifest in the flesh*, suffering a dreadful death, and rising from the dead.

This was the glorious Redeemer who redeemed the church out of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh; as Christ, by his death and sufferings, redeemed his people from Satan, the spiritual Pharaoh. He redeemed them from hard service and cruel drudgery; so Christ redeems his people from the cruel slavery of sin and Satan. He redeemed them, as it is said, *from the iron furnace*; so Christ redeems his church from a furnace of fire and everlasting burnings. He redeemed them with a strong hand and outstretched arm, and great and terrible judgments on their enemies; so Christ with mighty power triumphs over *principalities and powers*, and executes terrible judgments on his church's enemies, bruising the serpent's head. He saved them when others were destroyed, by the sprinkling of the blood of the paschal lamb; so God's church is saved from death by the sprinkling of the blood of Christ, when the rest of the world is destroyed. God brought forth the people sorely against the will of the Egyptians, when they could not bear to let them go; so Christ rescues his people out of the hands of the devil, sorely against his will, when his proud heart cannot bear to be overcome.

In that redemption, Christ not only redeemed the people from the Egyptians, but from the devils, the gods of Egypt; for before they had been in a state of servitude to the gods of Egypt, as well as to the Egyptians. And Christ, the seed of the woman, now, in a very remarkable manner, fulfilled the



curse on the serpent, in bruising his head. Exod. 13 : 12. "For I will pass through the land of Egypt this night, and will smite all the first-born in the land of Egypt, both man and beast, and against all the gods of Egypt will I execute judgment." Hell was as much, nay more engaged in that affair than Egypt was. The pride and cruelty of Satan, that old serpent, was more concerned in it than Pharaoh's. He did his worst against the people, and to the utmost opposed their redemption. But it is said, that when God redeemed his people out of Egypt, he "broke the heads of the dragons in the waters, and broke the head of Leviathan in pieces, and gave him to be meat for the people inhabiting the wilderness." Psalm 74 : 12-14. God forced their enemies to let them go, that they might serve him, as Zacharias observes with respect to the church under the Gospel. Luke, 1 : 74, 75.

'The people of Israel went out with a high hand, and Christ went before them in a pillar of cloud and fire. There was a glorious triumph over earth and hell in that deliverance. When Pharaoh and his hosts, and Satan by them, pursued the people, Christ overthrew them in the Red Sea : the Lord triumphed gloriously : the horse and his rider he cast into the sea, and there they slept their last sleep, and never followed the children of Israel any more ; as all Christ's enemies are overthrown in his blood, which by its abundant sufficiency, and the greatness of the sufferings with which it was shed, may well be represented by a sea. The Red Sea represented Christ's blood, for the apostle compares the children of Israel's passage through the Red Sea to baptism, (1 Cor. 10 : 1, 2,) and we know

that the water of baptism represents Christ's blood.

Thus Christ, the angel of God's presence, in his love and pity, redeemed his people, and carried them in the days of old as on eagle's wings, so that none of their proud and malicious enemies, neither Egyptians nor devils, could touch them.

This was another new thing that God did to wards this great work of redemption. God never had done any thing like it before. Deut. 4: 32, 34. This was a great advancement of the work that had been begun and carried on from the fall of man; a great step taken in divine providence towards a preparation for Christ's coming into the world, and working out his great and eternal redemption; for this was the people of whom Christ was to come.

And now we may see how that plant flourished which God had planted in Abraham. Though the family of which Christ was to come had been in a degree separated from the rest of the world before, in the calling of Abraham; yet that separation appeared not to be sufficient. For though by that separation they were kept, as strangers and sojourners, from being united with other people in the same political societies; yet they remained mixed among them, by which means they had been in danger of wholly losing the true religion, and of being overrun with the idolatry of their neighbors. God now, therefore, by this redemption, separated them as a nation from all others, to subsist by themselves in their own political and ecclesiastical state, without having any concern with the heathen nations, that the church of Christ might be upheld, and might keep the oracles of God; that in them might be kept up those types and prophecies of

Christ, and those histories and other divine previous instructions, which were necessary to prepare the way for Christ's coming.

II. As this people were separated to be God's peculiar people, so *all other people upon the face of the whole earth were wholly rejected* and given over to heathenism. This was one thing that God ordered in his providence to prepare the way for Christ's coming, and the great salvation he was to accomplish; for it was only to prepare the way for the more glorious and signal victory and triumph of Christ's power and grace over the wicked and miserable world, and that Christ's salvation of mankind might become the more sensible. This is the account the Scripture itself gives of the matter. Rom. 11: 30, 32. The apostle, speaking to the Gentiles that had formerly been heathens, says, "As ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief; even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they may also obtain mercy. For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all:" that is, it was the will of God that the whole world, Jews and Gentiles, should be concluded in visible and professed unbelief, that so God's mercy and Christ's salvation towards them all might be visible. For the apostle is not speaking only of that unbelief that is natural to all God's professing people as well as others, but that which is apparent and visible; such as the Jews fell into when they openly rejected Christ, and ceased to be a professing people. The apostle observes, how that first the Gentiles were included in a professed unbelief and open opposition to the

true religion before Christ came to prepare the way for the calling of the Gentiles, which was soon after, that God's mercy might be the more visible to them; and that the Jews were rejected and apostatized from the visible church, to prepare the way for the calling of the Jews, which shall be in the latter days. So that it may be seen of all nations, Jews and Gentiles, that they are redeemed by Christ, from being visibly aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, without hope, and without God in the world.

We cannot determine precisely at what time the apostacy of the Gentile nations from the true God, or their being concluded in visible unbelief, became universal. Their falling away was a gradual thing, as we observed before. It was general in Abraham's time, but not universal; for then we find Melchisedec, one of the kings of Canaan, was priest of the most high God. And after this the true religion was preserved for a while among some of the rest of Abraham's posterity besides the family of Jacob: and also in some of the posterity of Nahor, as we have instances in Job, and his three friends, and Elihu. The land of Uz, where Job lived, was possessed by the posterity of Uz, or Huz, the son of Nahor, Abraham's brother, of whom we read, Gen. 22:21. Bildad the Shuhite was of the offspring of Shuah, Abraham's son by Keturah, Gen. 25:1, 2; and Elihu the Buzite was of Buz, the son of Nahor, the brother of Abraham. So the true religion lasted among some other people besides the Israelites, a while after Abraham. But it did not last long; and it is probable that their total rejection, and being given up to idolatry, was about the time when God separated the children of Israel from

Egypt to serve him. For they are often put in mind on that occasion, that God had now separated them to be his peculiar people, or to be distinguished from all other people upon earth, to be his people alone; to be his portion, when others were rejected. This seems to imply, that God now chose them in such a manner as was accompanied with a visible rejection of all other nations in the world; that God visibly came, and took up his residence with them, forsaking all other nations. As the first calling of the Gentiles, after Christ came, was accompanied with a rejection of the Jews; so the first calling of the Jews to be God's people, when they left Egypt, was accompanied with a rejection of the Gentiles.

Thus all the nations in the world, except the Israelites, and those who embodied themselves with them, were given up to idolatry; and so continued till Christ came, which was about fifteen hundred years. They were concluded so long a time in unbelief, that there might be a thorough proof of the necessity of a Savior; that it might appear by so long a trial, past all contradiction, that mankind were utterly insufficient to deliver themselves from that gross darkness, and misery, and subjection to the devil, in which they were involved; and that all the wisdom of the heathen philosophers could not deliver them from their darkness, for the greater glory to Jesus Christ, who, when he came, enlightened and delivered them by his glorious Gospel. Herein the wonderful wisdom of God appeared, in thus preparing the way for Christ's redemption. This the Scripture teaches us. 1 Cor. 1:21. "For after that, in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom

knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe."

III. The next thing done towards the work of redemption, is God's *giving the moral law* in so awful a manner at Mount Sinai. This was another new thing that God did: Deut. 4 : 33. "Did ever people hear the voice of God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as thou hast heard, and live?" And it was a great thing, whether we consider it as a new exhibition of the covenant of works, or given as a rule of life.

The covenant of works was here exhibited as a schoolmaster to lead to Christ, not only for the use of that nation under the Old Testament, but for the use of God's church throughout all ages of the world. It is an instrument that the great Redeemer makes use of to convince men of their sin, misery, and helpless state, and of God's awful and tremendous majesty and justice as a Lawgiver, in order to make men sensible of the necessity of Christ as a Savior. This work of redemption, in its saving effect on men's souls, in all its progress, is not carried on without the use of this law delivered at Sinai.

It was given in an awful manner, with a terrible voice, so exceedingly loud and awful, that all the people in the camp trembled; and even Moses himself, though so intimate a friend of God, said, *I exceedingly fear and quake*. The voice was accompanied with thunders and lightnings, the mountain burning with fire to the midst of heaven, and the earth itself shaking and trembling. This was done to make all sensible how great were that authority, power, and justice that stood engaged to exact the fulfillment

of this law, and to see it fully executed, and how terrible would be his wrath against every transgressor; that men, being sensible of these things, might thoroughly prove their own hearts, and know how impossible it is for them to obtain salvation by the works of the law, and might see their absolute need of a mediator.

If we regard the law given at Mount Sinai not as a covenant of works, but as a rule of life, it is employed by the Redeemer, from that time to the end of the world, as a directory to his people, to show them the way in which they must walk, if they would reach heaven: for a way of sincere and universal obedience to this law is the narrow way that leads to life.

IV. The next thing observable in this period, was God's giving the *typical* law, those precepts that did not properly belong to the *moral* law. Not only those laws which are commonly called *ceremonial*, which prescribe the ceremonies and circumstances of the Jewish worship, and their ecclesiastical state; but also those that were political, for regulating the Jewish commonwealth, commonly called *judicial* laws, were many of them typical. The giving of this typical law was another great thing that God did in this period, tending to build up the glorious structure of redemption. There had been many typical events of providence before, that represented Christ and his redemption, and some typical ordinances, as particularly those two of sacrifices and circumcision: but now, instead of representing the great Redeemer in a few institutions, God enacts a law full of typical representations of good things to come. By these that nation were directed every

year, month, and day, in their religious actions, and in their conduct, in all that appertained to their ecclesiastical and civil state, to something of Christ ; one observance exhibiting one doctrine, or one benefit ; another, another ; so that the whole nation by this law was, as it were, constituted in a typical state. Thus the Gospel was abundantly held forth to that nation ; so that there is scarcely any doctrine of it but is particularly taught and exhibited by some observance of this law ; though it was in shadows, and under a vail, as Moses put a vail on his face when it shone. To this typical law belong all the precepts which relate to building the tabernacle set up in the wilderness, and all its form, circumstances, and utensils.

V. About this time was given to the church *the first written word of God*. This was another great thing done towards the work of redemption, a new and glorious advancement of the building. It was the beginning of that written rule, which God has given for the regulation of faith, worship, and practice, to the end of the world. This rule grew, and was added to from that time, for many ages, till it was finished, and the canon of Scripture completed by the apostle John. It is not very material whether the first written word was the ten commandments, written on the tables of stone with the finger of God, or the book of Job, nor whether the book of Job was written by Moses, as some suppose, or by Elihu, as others. If it was written by Elihu, it must have been before this period ; but yet could not be far from it, as appears by considering whose posterity the persons spoken of in it were, together with Job's great age before it was written.



The written word of God is the main instrument employed by Christ to carry on his work of redemption in all ages. There was a necessity now of the word of God being committed to writing, for a steady rule to God's church. Before this, the church had the word by tradition, either immediately from eminent men inspired, who were living, or else by tradition from former generations, which might be had with tolerable certainty in ages preceding this, by reason of men's long lives. Noah might converse with Methuselah, who lived in the time of Adam, and receive traditions from him; and Noah lived till about Abraham's time: and the sons of Jacob lived a considerable time to deliver the revelations made to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to their posterity in Egypt. But the distance from the beginning of things was now become so great, and the lives of men so short—being brought down to the present standard about the time of Moses—and God having now separated a nation to be a peculiar people, to be the keepers of his oracles; he saw it to be a convenient time now to commit his word to writing, to remain henceforward for a steady rule throughout all ages. And therefore, besides the book of Job, Christ wrote the ten commandments on tables of stone, with his own finger. After this, the whole law, as containing the substance of the five books of Moses, was by God's special command committed to writing, which was called "the book of the law," and was laid up in the tabernacle, to be kept there for the use of the church. Deut. 31 : 24–26.

VI. God was pleased now wonderfully to represent the progress of his redeemed church through the world to their eternal inheritance, by the *jour-*

*ney of the children of Israel through the wilderness* from Egypt to Canaan. Here all the various steps of the redemption of the church by Christ were represented, from the beginning to its consummation in glory. The state they are redeemed from is represented by Egypt, and their bondage there, which they left. The purchase of their redemption was represented by the sacrifice of the paschal lamb, which was offered up that night in which God slew all the first-born of Egypt. The beginning of the application of the redemption of Christ's church in their conversion, was represented by Israel's going out of Egypt, and passing through the Red Sea in so extraordinary and miraculous a manner. The travel of the church through this evil world, and the various changes through which the church passes, was represented by the journey of the Israelites through the wilderness. The manner of their being conducted by Christ, was represented by the Israelites being led by the pillar of cloud by day, and the pillar of fire by night. The manner of the church's being supported in their progress, supplied with spiritual food, and daily communications from God, was represented by his supplying the children of Israel with *manna* from heaven, and water out of the rock. The dangers that the saints must meet in their course through the world, were represented by the fiery flying serpents in the wilderness. The conflicts the church has with her enemies, were represented by their battle with the Amalekites and others. And innumerable other particulars might be mentioned, which were lively images of what the church and saints meet in all ages of the world. That these things were typical, is manifest from

1 Cor. 10 : 11. "Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples, and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come." Here the apostle is speaking of those very things which we have now mentioned, and he says expressly, that they happened unto them for *types* ; so it is in the original.

VII. Another thing must not be omitted, which was a great and remarkable dispensation of Providence, respecting the whole world of mankind, in this period: *the shortening of man's life*. It was now brought down from being between nine hundred and a thousand years, to about seventy or eighty. The life of man began to be shortened immediately after the flood. It was brought down the first generation to six hundred years, and the next to between four and five hundred. So the life of man gradually grew shorter and shorter, till about the time of the great mortality which was in the congregation of Israel, after they had murmured at the report of the spies, and their carcasses fell in the wilderness, whereby all the men of war died. Then the life of man was reduced to its present standard, as Moses observes in the Psalm he wrote on the occasion of that mortality. Psalm 90 : 10. "The days of our years are threescore years and ten ; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labor and sorrow ; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away."

Man's life being cut so very short, tended to prepare the way for poor short-lived men the more joyfully to entertain the glad tidings of everlasting life, *brought to light by the Gospel* ; and more readily to embrace a Savior, that purchases and

offers such a blessing. If men's lives were still commonly about nine hundred years, how much less would be the inducement to regard the proffers of a future life; how much greater the temptation to rest in the things of this world, and to neglect any other life but this? This probably contributed greatly to the wickedness of the antediluvians. But now how much greater motives have men to seek redemption, and a better life than this, by the great Redeemer, since the life of man is not one-twelfth part of what it used to be, and men now universally die at the age when formerly they used to be but setting out in the world.

VIII. The same work was carried on in *preserving that people of whom Christ was to come, from totally perishing in the wilderness*, by a constant miracle of forty years continuance. I observed before how God preserved those of whom the Redeemer was to proceed in a very wonderful manner; as Noah and his family from the flood; Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, with their families, from the wicked inhabitants of Canaan; and Jacob and his family from perishing by the famine, by Joseph in Egypt. But this preservation of Israel in the wilderness, was on some accounts more remarkable than any of them; it was by a continual miracle of so long duration. There were, as may be fairly computed, at first two millions of souls in that congregation. But if miraculous support had been withheld, they must all have perished in less than a month's time, so that there would not have been one of them left. But yet this vast multitude subsisted for forty years in a dry, barren wilderness, without sowing, reaping, or tillage. Their bread was daily rained down to them.

out of heaven, and they were furnished with water out of a rock; and the same clothes with which they came out of Egypt, lasted all that time. Never was an instance like this, of a nation being so upheld for so long a time. Thus God upheld his church by a continual miracle, and kept alive that people in whom was the blessing, the great Redeemer of the world.

IX. God was pleased, during this time, to give a further revelation of Christ the Redeemer in the *predictions of him*. Three prophecies deserve particular notice. The first is that of Balaam. Numb. 24: 17-19. "I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth. And Edom shall be a possession, Seir also shall be a possession for his enemies, and Israel shall do valiantly. Out of Jacob shall come he that shall have dominion, and shall destroy him that remaineth of the city." This is a plainer prophecy of Christ, especially with regard to his kingly office, than any former one. But we have another, that God gave by Moses, plainer still, especially with regard to his prophetic office, in Deut. 18: 18, &c. "I will raise up a prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth, and he shall speak unto them all that I command him," &c. This is a plainer prophecy of Christ than any before, as all the preceding prophecies were in figurative, mystical language. The first prophecy was so, That the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head. The promises made to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob that "in their seed all

the families of the earth should be blessed," were also mystical; and not so particular, because the expression, *thy seed*, is general, and not plainly limited to any particular person. The prophecy of Jacob in blessing Judah, Gen. 49:8, is in mystical language; and so is that of Balaam, which speaks of Christ under the figurative expression of a *star*. But this is a plain prophecy, without being veiled at all in any mystical language.

There are several things contained in this prophecy of Christ. Here is his mediatorial office in general. Ver. 16. Here it is revealed how he should be a person to stand between them and God, a being of such awful majesty, holiness, and justice, that they could not come to him, and have intercourse with him immediately, without a Mediator to stand between them; because, if they came to such a sin-avenging God immediately, they should die; God would prove a consuming fire to them. Here also is a particular revelation of Christ, with respect to his prophetic office: "*I will raise up a prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee,*" &c. It is revealed what kind of a prophet he should be; a prophet like unto Moses, who was the head and leader of all the people, and who, under God, had been their redeemer, to bring them out of the house of bondage. He was their shepherd by whom God led them through the Red Sea and the wilderness, was an intercessor for them with God, and was both a prophet and a king in the congregation: for Moses had the power of a king among them. It is said of him, Deut. 33:5, that "he was a king in Jeshurun;" and he was the prophet by whom God built up his church, and delivered his instructions of worship. Thus Christ was

to be a prophet like unto Moses ; so that this is both the plainest and fullest prophecy of Christ that had been from the beginning of the world.

The next prophecy respects the calling of the Gentiles, which should be after Christ's coming. Deut. 32 : 21. Here is a very plain prophecy of the rejection of the Jews and calling the Gentiles. As they moved *God* to jealousy, by that which was not God, by casting him off, and taking others that were no gods in his room ; so God declares that he will move *them* to jealousy in like manner, by casting them off, and taking others, who had not been his people, in their room. The Apostle Paul takes notice of this prophecy, as foretelling the calling of the Gentiles. Rom. 10 : 19, 20. "But I say, Did not Israel know ? First, Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not ; I was made manifest to them that asked not after me."

Thus you see how the light of the Gospel, which first began to dawn immediately after the fall, gradually increases the nearer we come to Christ's time.

X. Another thing by which God carried on this work in this time, was a remarkable outpouring of *his Spirit on the young generation in the wilderness*. The generation that was grown up when they came out of Egypt, from twenty years old and upward, were very froward and perverse. They were tainted with the idolatry and wickedness of Egypt, and were not weaned from it. Ezek. 20 : 6-8. Hence they made the golden calf in imitation of the idolatry of the Egyptians, who were wont to worship a bull or an ox ; and therefore cattle are called *the abomina-*

*tion of the Egyptians* ; that is, their idol. With this generation God was exceedingly angry, and swore in his wrath, that they should not enter into his rest. But the younger generation, who were under twenty years old when they came out of Egypt, were not so. Numb. 14 : 31. " But your little ones, whom ye said should be a prey, them will I bring in ; and they shall know the land that ye have despised." This was the generation with whom the covenant was renewed, as we have an account in Deuteronomy, and that entered into the land of Canaan. This generation God was pleased to make a people to his praise, and they were eminent for piety ; as appears by many things said about them ; particularly, Jer. 2 : 2, 3. " I remember thee, the kindness of thy youth, the love of thine espousals, when thou wentest after me in the wilderness, in a land that was not sown. Israel was holiness unto the Lord, and the first-fruits of his increase." Here the generation that went after God in the wilderness, is spoken of with very high commendations, as eminent for holiness. Their love to God is distinguished like the love of a bride at her espousals, when they followed him through that dreadful wilderness, after they went back from Kadesh-Barnea. Deut. 8 : 15. " Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery serpents, and scorpions, and drought, where there was no water." Though this generation had a much greater trial than the generation of their fathers had before they came to Kadesh-Barnea, yet they never murmured against God, as their fathers had done ; but their trials had a contrary effect upon them, to awaken, convince, and humble them, and fit them for great mercy. They were awakened by those awful



judgments of God, inflicted on their fathers, whereby their carcasses fell in the wilderness. God poured out his Spirit with those awakening providences, and their own travel in the wilderness, and the word preached to them by Moses; whereby they were made to see the vileness of their own hearts, were humbled, and at length multitudes of them savingly converted; as Deut. 8:2, 3. "And thou shalt remember the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldst keep his commandments or no. And he humbled thee," &c. And ver. 15. "Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness—that he might humble thee, and that he might prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter end." And therefore it is said, Hos. 13:5, "I did know thee in the wilderness, in the land of great drought." God allured them, and brought them into that wilderness, and spake comfortably to them, as it was foretold that he would do afterwards. Hos. 2:14.

Those terrible judgments executed in the congregation after their turning back from Kadesh-Barnea, in the matter of Korah, and the matter of Peor, were chiefly on the *old* generation, whom God consumed in the wilderness. Those rebellions were chiefly among the elders of the congregation, who were given up to their hearts' lust; and they walked in their own counsels, and God was grieved with their manners forty years in the wilderness.

That this younger generation were eminent for piety, appears by all their history. The former generation were wicked, and were followed with curses; but this was holy, and wonderful blessings followed

them. God did great things for them ; he fought for them, and gave them the possession of Canaan. And it is God's manner, when he has very great mercies to bestow on a visible people, first, to fit them for such mercies, and then to confer them. So it was here : they believed in God, and by faith overcame Sihon and Og, and the giants of Canaan ; and are commended for cleaving to the Lord, Josh. 23 : 8. Joshua says unto them, " Cleave unto the Lord, as ye have done unto this day." But when Joshua and all that generation were dead, there arose another that knew not the Lord. This pious generation showed a laudable and fervent zeal for God in several instances ; as on occasion of Achan's sin ; but especially when they suspected the two tribes and a half had set up an altar in opposition to the altar of burnt-offering. There never was any generation of Israel of which so much good and so little evil is mentioned. It is further observable, that in the time of this generation was the second general circumcision, whereby the reproach of Israel was fully rolled away, and they became pure ; and when afterwards they were polluted by Achan, they purged themselves again.

The men of the former generation being dead, and God having sanctified this to himself, he solemnly renewed his covenant with them, as we have a particular account in the 29th chapter of Deuteronomy. We find that such solemn renovations of the covenant commonly accompanied any remarkable outpouring of the Spirit, causing a general reformation : so we find it was in Hezekiah's and Josiah's times. It is questionable whether there ever was a time when religion so flourished in the Israelitish church as in that

generation ; and as, in the Christian church, religion was in its most flourishing circumstances in the day of its espousals, in the apostles' time, so it seems to have been with the Jewish church in the days of its first establishment in the times of Moses and Joshua.

Thus God, at this time, gloriously advanced the work of redemption, both by his word and Spirit. Hereby the work of redemption was promoted, not only as it was in itself a glorious instance of redemption in its application, but as this was what God used for the orderly establishment of the Israelitish church, when it was first settled in the regular observance of God's ordinances in Canaan : even as the outpouring of the Spirit in the beginning of the Christian church, was a great means for establishing the Christian church in all succeeding ages.

XI. The next thing I would observe, was God's bringing the people of Israel by Joshua, and *settling them in that land where Christ was to be born*, and which was the great type of the heavenly Canaan which Christ has purchased. Joshua was of Joseph's posterity, and was an eminent type of Christ, and is therefore called the shepherd, the stone of Israel. Gen. 49 : 24. Being such a type, he bore the name of Christ. Joshua and Jesus are the same name, the one Hebrew, the other Greek ; and therefore, in the New Testament, originally written in Greek, Joshua is called Jesus, Acts, 7 : 45, " which also our fathers brought in with Jesus," that is, Joshua ; Heb. 4 : 8, " If Jesus (that is, if Joshua) had given them rest, he would not have spoken of another day."

God wonderfully gave his people possession of  
Redemption.

his land, conquering its former inhabitants and the mighty giants, as Christ conquered the devil. He first conquered the great kings on the eastern side of Jordan, Sihon king of the Amorites, and Og king of Bashan; and then divided the river Jordan, as before he had done the Red Sea; causing the walls of Jericho to fall down at the sound of the trumpets of the priests. That sound typified the sound of the Gospel by the preaching of gospel ministers, the walls of the accursed city Jericho signifying the walls of Satan's kingdom. After this he wonderfully destroyed the mighty host of the Amorites under the five kings, causing the sun and moon to stand still, to help the people against their enemies, at the prayer of the typical Jesus; plainly intimating that God would make the whole course of nature to be subservient to the work of redemption; and that every thing should give place to the welfare of God's redeemed people.

Thus did Christ show his great love to his people, that he would make the course of nature to give place to their happiness and prosperity: and showed that the sun and moon, and all things visible and invisible, were theirs by his purchase. At the same time Christ fought as the Captain of their host, and cast down great hailstones upon their enemies, by which more were slain than by the sword of Israel. And after this Christ gave the people a mighty victory over a yet greater army in the northern part of the land, gathered together at the waters of Merom, as the sand of the sea-shore Josh. 11: 4.

Thus God gave the people whence Christ was to proceed, the land where he was to be born; where

he was to live, preach, and work miracles; to die, and rise again; and whence he was to ascend into heaven, as the land which was a great type of heaven.

XII. Another thing that God did towards carrying on this work, was his actually *establishing his stated worship* among the people, as it had been before instituted in the wilderness. This worship was appointed at Mount Sinai; it was to make way for the coming of Christ; and the innumerable ceremonial observances of it were typical of him and his redemption. But there were many parts of their instituted worship that could not be observed in the wilderness, by reason of their unsettled state there. And there were many precepts that respected the land of Canaan, and their places of habitation there, which could not be put in practice till they came into that land. But now, when this was brought to pass, God set up his tabernacle in the midst of his people, as he had before promised them. Lev. 26:11. "I will set my tabernacle amongst you." The tabernacle was set up at Shiloh, (Josh. 18:1,) and the priests and the Levites had their offices appointed them, and the cities of refuge, and now the people were in a condition to observe their feasts of first-fruits, and their feasts of ingathering, and to bring all their tithes and appointed offerings to the Lord; and most parts of God's worship were now observed, though some were not till afterwards.

XIII. The next thing was God's wonderfully preserving that people, from this time forward, *when all the males went up, three times in the year, to the place where God's ark was.* The people of Israel were generally surrounded with enemies, who

sought all opportunities to destroy them, and dispossess them of their land. Till David's time, there were great numbers in the land of the remains of the Canaanites and the other former inhabitants, who were bitter enemies to the people of Israel: and these had, three times in the year, a fair opportunity of overrunning their country, and getting possession of their cities, when only the women, and those who were not able to go up, were left behind. And yet they were remarkably preserved throughout all generations at such seasons, agreeably to the promise, *Exod. 34:24*, "Neither shall any man desire thy land, when thou shalt go up to appear before the Lord thy God thrice in the year." So wonderfully did God order affairs, and influence the hearts of their enemies. They were full of enmity against Israel, desired to dispossess them of their land, and often had so fair an opportunity, that the whole country was left naked and empty of all that could resist them. It would have been only for them to go and take possession; and yet we never read in all their history, of any of their enemies taking these opportunities against them; which could be no less than a continual miracle, which God, for the preservation of his church, wrought for so many generations. It was surely a wonderful dispensation of divine Providence to maintain and promote God's great design of redemption.

XIV. God's preserving his church and the true religion from being wholly extinct in the frequent *apostasies* of the Israelites in the time of the judges. How prone was that people to forsake the true God, who had done such wonderful things for them, and to fall into idolatry! and how did the land, from

time to time, seem to be almost overrun with it ! But yet God never suffered his true worship to be totally rooted out : his tabernacle stood, the ark was preserved, the book of the law was kept from being destroyed, God's priesthood was upheld, and he still had a church among the people. Time after time, when religion seemed to be almost gone, God granted a revival, and sent some angel, or raised up some eminent person, to be an instrument of their reformation.

XV. God's preserving that nation from being destroyed, although they were so often subdued and *brought under the dominion of their enemies*. It is a wonder, not only that the true religion was not wholly rooted out, and so the church destroyed, but also that the very nation in which that church was, was not utterly destroyed ; they were so often brought under the power of their enemies. One while they were subdued by Chushan-rishathaim, king of Mesopotamia ; another while they were brought under the Moabites ; now they were sold into the hand of Jabin, king of Canaan ; then they were under the dominion of the Midianites ; now they were sorely distressed by the children of Ammon ; and then by the Philistines. But yet God, in all these dangers, preserved them, and kept them from being wholly overthrown. From time to time, when it was come to extremity, and God saw that they were upon the very brink of ruin, then he raised up a deliverer, agreeable to Deut. 32 : 36. "For the Lord shall judge his people, and repent himself for his servants ; when he seeth their power is gone, and there is none shut up or left." Those remarkable dispensations of Providence are set forth

in a very lively and beautiful manner by the Psalmist, Psal. 106 : 34, &c. These deliverers were all types of Christ, the great Redeemer and Deliverer of his church ; and some of them very remarkably so ; as Barak, Jephthah, Gideon, and Samson, in very many particulars ; especially Samson.

XVI. It is observable, that when Christ appeared to manage the affairs of his church in this period, he *often appeared in the form of that nature which he took upon him in his incarnation.* So he seems to have appeared repeatedly to Moses, and particularly at that time when God spake to him face to face, as a man speaketh to his friend, and he beheld the similitude of the Lord, Num. 12 : 8, after he had besought him to show him his glory ; which was the most remarkable vision that ever he had of Christ. There was a twofold discovery that Moses had of Christ : one was spiritual, by the word that was proclaimed : "The Lord, the Lord God, merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity, and transgression, and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty ; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and fourth generation." Exod. 34 : 6, &c. Another was external ; which was that which Moses saw, when Christ passed by, and put him in a cleft of the rock. What he saw was doubtless a glorious human form, in which Christ appeared to him, and probably the form of his glorified human nature, in which he should afterwards appear. He saw not his face ; for it is not to be supposed that any man could subsist under



a sight of the glory of Christ's human nature as it now appears.

So it was a human form in which Christ appeared to the seventy elders. *Exod. 24 : 9, 11.* "Then went up Moses and Aaron, Nadab and Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel. And they saw the God of Israel : and there was under his feet, as it were, a paved work of a sapphire-stone, and as it were the body of heaven in his clearness. And upon the nobles of the children of Israel he laid not his hand : also they saw God, and did eat and drink." So Christ appeared afterwards to Joshua in the form of the human nature. *Josh. 5 : 13, 14.* "And it came to pass when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold, there stood a man over against him, with his sword drawn in his hand : and Joshua went unto him, and said unto him, Art thou for us, or for our adversaries ? And he said, Nay, but as Captain of the host of the Lord am I now come." And so he appeared to Gideon, *Judges, 6 : 11 ;* and so also to Manoah, *Judg. 13 : 17-21.* Here Christ appeared to Manoah in a representation both of his incarnation and death ; of his incarnation, in that he appeared in a human form ; and of his death and sufferings, represented by the sacrifice of a kid, and by his ascending up in the flame of the sacrifice ; intimating that he was the great sacrifice, that must be offered up to God for a sweet savor, in the fire of his wrath, as that kid was burned and ascended up in the flame. Thus Christ appeared time after time, in the form of that nature he was afterwards to assume ; because he now appeared on the same design and to carry on the same work.

XVII. Another thing done in this period towards the work of redemption, is the beginning of a *succession of prophets*, and the erection of a school of the prophets, in Samuel's time. 'There was something of this spirit of prophecy in Israel after Moses, before Samuel. Joshua and many of the judges had a degree of it. Deborah was a prophetess; and some of the high-priests were inspired with this spirit, particularly Eli. 'That space of time was not wholly without instances of those who were set apart of God especially to this office, and so were called prophets. Such an one we read of, Judg. 6 : 8. "The Lord sent a prophet unto the children of Israel, which said unto them," &c. Such an one he seems to have been of whom we read, 1 Sam, 2 : 27. "And there came a man of God to Eli."

But there was no such order of men upheld in Israel, for any constancy, before Samuel: the want of it is taken notice of, 1 Sam. 3 : 1. "And the word of the Lord was precious in those days; there was no open vision." But in Samuel there was begun a *succession* of prophets, maintained continually from that time, at least with very little interruption, till the spirit of prophecy ceased, about the time of Malachi: and therefore Samuel is spoken of in the New Testament as the beginning of this succession of prophets. Acts, 3 : 24. "And all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have foretold of these days." After Samuel was Nathan, Gad, Iddo, Heman, Asaph, and others. And afterwards, in the end of Solomon's reign, we read of Ahijah; and in Jeroboam and Rehoboam's time, we read of prophets; and so continually one prophet succeeded another

till the captivity. In the writings of those prophets who are inserted in the canon of Scripture, we read of prophets as being a constant order of men upheld in the land. And even during the captivity there were prophets still, as Ezekiel and Daniel; and after the captivity, as Zechariah, Haggai, and Malachi.

And because God intended a constant succession of prophets from Samuel, in his time was begun a school of the prophets; that is, a school of young men, trained up under some great prophet, who was their master and teacher in the study of divine things, and the practice of holiness, to fit them for this office as God should call them to it. Those young men were called *the sons of the prophets*; and oftentimes they are termed *prophets*. These at first were under the tuition of Samuel. Thus we read of Samuel's being appointed over them, 1 Sam. 19 : 20. "And when they saw the company of the prophets prophesying, and Samuel standing as appointed over them." The company of prophets of whom we read, 1 Sam. 10 : 5, were the same. Afterwards we read of their being under Elijah. Elisha was one of these sons; but he desired to have a double portion of his spirit, as his successor, as the eldest son was wont to have a double portion of the estate of his father; and therefore the sons of the prophets, when they perceived that the spirit of Elijah rested on Elisha, submitted themselves to him, and owned him for their master, as they had done Elijah before him. 2 Kings, 2 : 15. "And when the sons of the prophets which were to view at Jericho, saw him, they said, The spirit of Elijah doth rest on Elisha. And they bowed them-

selves to the ground before him." Elisha being their master or teacher, he had the care of them. 2 Kings, 4 : 38. " And Elisha came again into Gilgal, and there was a dearth in the land, and the sons of the prophets were sitting before him ; and he said unto his servant, Set on the great pot, and seethe pottage for the sons of the prophets." In Elijah's and Elisha's time, there were several places where companies of these sons of the prophets resided : as at Bethel, at Jericho, and at Gilgal, unless these at Gilgal and Jericho were the same : and possibly that which is called *the college*, where the prophetess Huldah resided, was another at Jerusalem. See 2 Kings, 22 : 14. It is there said of Huldah the prophetess, that " she dwelt in Jerusalem, in the college." They had houses built, where they used to dwell together ; and therefore those at Jericho being multiplied, and finding their house too little for them, desired leave of their master and teacher Elisha, to go and hew timber to build a larger. 2 Kings, 6 : 1, 2. At some times there were numbers of these sons of the prophets in Israel ; for when Jezebel cut off the prophets of the Lord, it is said that Obadiah took a hundred of them and hid them by fifty in a cave. 1 Kings, 18 : 4.

These schools of the prophets being set up by Samuel, and afterwards continued by such as Elijah and Elisha, must be of divine appointment ; and accordingly we find that those sons of the prophets were often favored with a degree of inspiration while they continued under tuition ; and God commonly, when he called any prophet to the constant exercise of the prophetic office, and to some extraordinary service, took them out of these schools,

though not universally. Hence the prophet Amos, speaking of his being called to the prophetic office, says, that he had not been educated in the schools of the prophets, and was not one of the sons of the prophets. Chap. 7 : 14, 15. Amos taking notice of it as remarkable that he should be so called, shows that it was God's ordinary manner to take his prophets out of these schools; for therein he did but bless his own institution.

Now this remarkable dispensation of Providence—God's beginning a constant succession of prophets in Samuel's time, which was to last for many ages; and to that end, establishing a school of the prophets under Samuel, thenceforward to be continued in Israel—was to further the great work of redemption. For the main business of this succession of prophets was, to foreshow Christ, and the glorious redemption he was to accomplish, and so to prepare the way for his coming. Acts, 3 : 24, and 10 : 43, "To him give all the prophets witness;" and 3 : 18, "But those things which God before had showed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled."

The Old Testament church had a degree of light, not from the sun directly, but only as reflected. These prophets were the luminaries that reflected the light of the sun; and accordingly they spoke abundantly of Jesus Christ, as appears by what we have of their prophecies. And they made it very much their business, when they studied in their schools or colleges, and elsewhere, to search out the work of redemption; agreeable to what the apostle Peter says of them, 1 Pet. 1 : 10, 11. "Of which salvation the prophets have inquired, and searched dili-

gently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you ; searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ that was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow." We are told that the church of the Redeemer is built on the foundation of the prophets and apostles, the Redeemer himself being the chief corner-stone. Eph. 2 : 20.

This was the first thing of this nature ever done in the world : and a great thing towards the work of redemption. There had before been occasional prophecies of Christ, as was shown ; but now the time drawing nearer when the Redeemer should come, it pleased God to appoint a certain order of men, in constant succession, whose main business it should be to foreshow Christ and his redemption, and as his forerunners to prepare the way for his coming ; and God established schools, wherein multitudes were instructed and trained up to that end. Rev. 19 : 10. "I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus ; for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

---

## CHAPTER V.

### FROM DAVID TO THE BABYLONISH CAPTIVITY.

I. The first thing here to be noticed, is God's *anointing that person who was to be the ancestor of*

*Christ*, to be king over his people. The dispensations of Providence through the last period, respect the *people* whence Christ was to proceed; but now the Scripture leads us to consider God's providence towards that particular *person* from whom Christ was to descend, David. It pleased God at this time remarkably to select this person, from all the thousands of Israel, and to put a most honorable mark of distinction upon him, by anointing him to be king over his people. It was only God that could find him out. His father's house is spoken of as being little in Israel, and he was the youngest of all the sons of his father, and was least expected by Samuel to be the man whom God had chosen. God had before remarkably distinguished the persons from whom Christ was to come; as Seth, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: But the last account we have of God's marking out in any notable manner the very person of whom Christ was to come, was in Jacob's blessing his son Judah; unless we reckon Nashon's advancement in the wilderness to be the head of the tribe of Judah. But this distinction of the person of whom Christ was to come, in David, was very honorable; for it was God's anointing him to be king over his people. There was something further denoted by this, than in the anointing of Saul. God anointed Saul to be king *personally*; but by sending Samuel to anoint David, he intended to establish the crown of Israel in him and his *family*, as long as Israel continued to be a kingdom; and not only so, but what was infinitely more, to establish the crown of his universal church, his spiritual Israel, in his seed, to the end of the world, and throughout eternity.

This was a great dispensation of God in advancing the work of redemption, as the time drew near wherein Christ was to come. David, as he was the ancestor of Christ, so he was the greatest personal type of Christ under the Old Testament. The types of Christ were of three sorts—instituted, providential, and personal. The ordinance of *sacrificing* was the greatest of the *instituted* types; the redemption out of Egypt was the greatest of the *providential*; and David the greatest of the *personal* ones. Hence Christ is often called David in the prophecies of Scripture, as Ezek. 34: 23, 24, “And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David;—My servant David a prince among them;” and so in many other places. He is very often spoken of as the seed and the Son of David.

David being the ancestor and great type of Christ, his being solemnly anointed by God to be king over his people, that the kingdom of his church might be continued in his family for ever, may, in some respects, be regarded as an anointing of Christ himself. Christ was, as it were, anointed in him; and therefore Christ’s anointing and David’s anointing are spoken of under one in Scripture. Psalm 89: 20. “I have found David my servant: with my holy oil have I anointed him.” And David’s throne and Christ’s are spoken of as one. Luke, 1: 32. “And the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.” Acts, 2: 30. “David—knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne.”

Thus God’s beginning the kingdom of his church



in the house of David, was, as it were, a new establishing of the kingdom of Christ the beginning of it in a state of such visibility, as it thenceforward continued in. It was planting the root whence that branch of righteousness was afterwards to spring up, the everlasting king of his church; and therefore this everlasting king is called "the branch from the stem of Jesse." Isa. 11: 1. "And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a branch shall grow out of his roots." Jer. 23: 5. "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise up unto David a righteous branch, and a king shall reign and prosper." So chap. 33: 15. "In those days, and at that time, I will cause the branch of righteousness to grow up unto David, and he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land." So Christ, in the New Testament, is called the root and offspring of David. Rev. 22: 16.

It is observable that God anointed David after Saul to reign in his room. He took away the crown from him and his family, who was higher in stature than any of his people, and was, in their eyes, fittest to bear rule—to give it to David, who was low of stature, and in comparison of despicable appearance. So God was pleased to show how Christ, who appeared without form or comeliness, and was despised and rejected of men, should take the kingdom from the great ones of the earth. And also it is observable that David was the youngest of Jesse's sons, as Jacob the younger brother supplanted Esau, and got the birthright and blessing from him; and as Pharez, brother of Christ's ancestor, supplanted Zarah in the birth; and as Isaac, another of the ancestors of Christ, cast out his elder brother Ishmael:

thus was that frequent saying of Christ fulfilled, "The last shall be first, and the first last."

II. The next thing I would observe, is God's *preserving David's life*, by a series of wonderful providences, till Saul's death. I before took notice of the wonderful preservation of other ancestors of Christ, as Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob; and have observed how, in their preservation, the work of redemption itself may be looked upon as preserved from being defeated, and the whole church, which is redeemed through him, from being overthrown. But the preservation of David was no less remarkable than that of any other. How often was there but a step between him and death. The first instance of it we have in his encountering a lion and a bear, when they had caught a lamb out of his flock, which, without miraculous assistance, could at once have rent this young stripling in pieces, as easily as they could the lamb that he delivered from them. So the "Root and offspring" of David was preserved from the roaring lion that goes about seeking whom he may devour, and conquered him, and rescued the souls of men, that were as lambs in the mouth of this lion. Another remarkable instance was, in preserving him from that mighty giant Goliath, who was strong enough to have torn him to pieces, and given his flesh to the beasts of the field and to the fowls of the air, as he threatened. But God preserved him, and gave him the victory over Goliath, so that he cut off his head with his own sword, and thus was made the deliverer of Israel. So Christ slew the spiritual Goliath with his own weapon, the cross, and delivered his people. And how remarkably did God preserve David from

being slain by Saul, when he first sought his life, by giving his daughter to be a snare to him, that the hand of the Philistines might be upon him, requiring of him a hundred foreskins of the Philistines, that so his life might be exposed to them. The same divine care was evident in preserving him afterwards, when Saul spake to Jonathan and to all his servants to kill David; and in inclining Jonathan, instead of killing him, as his father commanded, to love him as his own soul, and to be a great instrument of his preservation, even so as to expose his own life to preserve David: though one would have thought that none would be more willing to have David killed than Jonathan, seeing he was competitor with him for the crown. Again, Saul threw a javelin at him, to smite him even to the wall; and sent messengers to his house, to watch, and to kill him, when Michal, Saul's daughter, let him down through a window. He afterwards sent messengers, once and again, to Naioth in Ramah, to take him, and they were remarkably prevented by miraculous impressions of the Spirit of God; and when Saul, being resolute in the affair, went himself, he also was among the prophets. How wonderfully was David's life preserved at Gath among the Philistines, when he went to Achish the king of Gath, and was there in the hands of the Philistines, who, one would have thought, would have despatched him at once, he having so much provoked them by his exploits against them. He was again wonderfully preserved at Keilah, when he had entered into a fenced town, where Saul thought he was sure of him. And how wonderfully was he preserved from Saul, when he

pursued and hunted him in the mountains. How remarkably did God deliver him in the wilderness of Maon, when Saul and his army were compassing David about. How was he delivered in the cave of Engedi, when, instead of Saul's killing David, God delivered Saul into his hands in the cave. David cut off his skirt, and might as easily have cut off his head. He was delivered in like manner in the wilderness of Ziph; and afterwards preserved in the land of the Philistines, though David had fought against the Philistines, and conquered them at Keilah, since he was last among them. This, one would think, would have been sufficient warning to them not to trust him, or let him escape a second time; but yet now God wonderfully turned their hearts to befriend and protect, instead of destroying him.

Thus was the precious seed that virtually contained the Redeemer, and all the blessings of his redemption, wonderfully preserved, when hell and earth conspired to destroy it. How often does David himself take notice of this, with praise and admiration, in the book of Psalms.

III. About this time, *the written word of God*, or the canon of Scripture, *was enlarged by Samuel*. I have before observed, that the canon of Scripture was begun, and the first written rule of faith and practice was given to the church about the time of Moses. Joshua probably enlarged it, and wrote the last chapter of Deuteronomy, and most of the book of Joshua. Some think that Joshua, Judges, Ruth, and part of the first book of Samuel, were written by Samuel. However that was, of this we have good evidence, that Samuel made an addition to the canon of Scrip-

ture; for Samuel is manifestly mentioned in the New Testament, as one of the prophets whose writings we have in Scripture, Acts, 3 : 24. "Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days." By that expression, "as many as have spoken," is meant, as many as have written.

And the way that Samuel spoke of these times of Christ and the Gospel, was by giving the history of those things that typified, and pointed to them, particularly what he wrote concerning David. The Spirit of God moved him to commit those things to writing, chiefly because they pointed to Christ, and the times of the Gospel; and, as was said before, this was the main business of all that succession of prophets that began in Samuel. That Samuel added to the canon of the Scriptures seems further to appear from 1 Chron. 29 : 29. "Now the acts of David the king, first and last, behold they are written in the book of Samuel the seer."

Whether the book of Joshua was written by Samuel or not, yet it is the general opinion of divines, that the books of Judges and Ruth, and part of the first book of Samuel, were penned by him. The book of Ruth was written for this reason, that though it seemed to treat of private affairs, the persons chiefly spoken of were of the family whence David and Christ proceeded, and so pointed to what the apostle Peter observed of Samuel and the other prophets, in the third chapter of Acts. These additions to the canon of Scripture, the great and main instrument of the application of redemption, are to be considered as a further continuation of that work, and an addition made to that great building.

IV. Another thing God did towards this work, at that time, was his inspiring David to *show forth Christ and his redemption, in divine songs*, which should be for the use of the church, in public worship, throughout all ages. David was himself endowed with the spirit of prophecy. He is called *a prophet*, Acts, 2: 29, 30. "Let me freely speak to you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day; therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath," &c. So that he was a type of Christ, in that he was both a *prophet* and a *king*.

The oil that was used in anointing David was a type of the Spirit of God; and the type and the antitype were given together; as we are told, 1 Sam. 16: 13. "Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren; and the Spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward;" and it is probable, that it now came upon him in its prophetic influences. One way that this Spirit influenced him, was by inspiring him to show forth Christ, and the glorious things of his redemption, in divine songs, sweetly expressing the breathings of a pious soul, full of admiration of the glorious things of the Redeemer, inflamed with divine love and elevated praise; and therefore he is called the sweet psalmist of Israel, 2 Sam. 23: 1. The main subjects of these songs were the glorious things of the Gospel; as is evident by the interpretation given, and the use made of them in the New Testament; for there is no one book of the Old Testament that is so often quoted in the New, as the book of Psalms. Joyfully did this holy man sing of

those great things of Christ's redemption, that had been the hope and expectation of God's church and people from the beginning : and joyfully did others follow him in it, as Asaph, Heman, Ethan, and others ; for the book of Psalms was not all penned by David, though the greater part of it was. Hereby the canon of Scripture was further enlarged by an excellent portion of divine writ.

This was a great advancement that God made in this building ; and the light of the Gospel, which had been gradually brightening, was exceedingly increased by it : for whereas before, there was but here and there a prophecy given of Christ in a great many ages, here Christ is spoken of by his ancestor David, abundantly in multitudes of songs, speaking of his incarnation, life, death, resurrection, ascension into heaven, his satisfaction and intercession ; his prophetic, kingly, and priestly office ; his glorious benefits in this life and that which is to come ; his union with the church, and the blessedness of the church in him ; the calling of the Gentiles, the future glory of the church near the end of the world, and Christ's coming to the final judgment. All these things, and many more, concerning Christ and his redemption, are abundantly spoken of in the book of Psalms.

This was also a glorious advancement of the work of redemption, as God hereby gave his church a book of divine songs for their use in public worship, in singing his praises throughout all ages to the end of the world. It is manifest the book of Psalms was given of God for this end. It was used in the church of Israel by God's appointment, as appears by the title of many of the Psalms, in which they are in

scribed to the chief musician, the man appointed to be the leader of divine songs in the temple, in the public worship of Israel. So David is called *the sweet psalmist of Israel*, because he penned psalms for the use of the church of Israel; and accordingly we have an account that they were sung in the church of Israel for that end, even ages after David was dead; as 2 Chron. 29 : 30. "Moreover, Hezekiah the king, and the princes, commanded the Levites to sing praises unto the Lord with the words of David, and of Asaph the seer." And we find that the same are appointed in the New Testament to be made use of in the Christian church, in their worship. Eph. 5 : 19. "Speaking to yourselves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs." Col. 3 : 16. "Admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs." So they have been, and will be, to the end of the world, used in the church to celebrate the praises of God. The people of God were wont sometimes to worship God by singing songs to his praise before, as they did at the Red Sea; and they had Moses' prophetic song, in the 32d chapter of Deuteronomy, committed to them for that end; and Deborah, Barak, and Hannah sung praises to God; but now first did God commit to his church a book of divine songs for their constant use.

V. The next thing I would notice, is *God's actually exalting David to the throne of Israel*, notwithstanding all the opposition made to it. God was determined to do it, and he made every thing give place that stood in the way. He removed Saul and his sons; and first set David over the tribe of Judah; and then having removed Ishbosheth, set him over all Israel. Thus did God fulfill his word to David.



He took him from the sheep-cote, and made him king over his people Israel. Psalm 78: 70, 71. And now the throne of Israel was established in that family in which it was to continue for ever.

VI. Now God first *chose a particular city* out of all the tribes of Israel to place his name there. There is several times mention made in the law of Moses, of the children of Israel bringing their oblations to the place which God should choose; as Deut. 12: 5-7; but God had never proceeded to do it till now. The tabernacle and ark were never fixed, but sometimes in one place and sometimes in another; but now God proceeded to choose Jerusalem. The city of Jerusalem was never thoroughly conquered, or taken out of the hands of the Jebusites, till David's time. It is said, Joshua, 15: 63, "As for the Jebusites, the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the children of Judah could not drive them out; but the Jebusites dwell with the children of Judah at Jerusalem unto this day." But now David wholly subdued it, as we have an account in 2 Sam. 5. And God proceeded to choose that city *to place his name there*, as appears by David's bringing up the ark thither soon after; which is mentioned as the first time God chose a city to that end. 2 Chron. 6: 5, 6, and 12: 13. Afterwards God proceeded to show David the very place where he would have his temple built: the threshing-floor of Araunah the Jebusite.

This city of Jerusalem is therefore called the *holy city*; and it was the greatest type of the church of Christ in all the Old Testament. It was redeemed by David, the captain of the hosts of Israel, out of the hands of the Jebusites, to be God's city, the *holy*

place of his rest for ever, where he would dwell. So Christ, the Captain of his people's salvation, redeems his church out of the hands of devils, to be his holy and beloved city. And therefore how often does the Scripture, when speaking of Christ's redemption of his church, call it by the names of Zion and Jerusalem. This was the city that God had appointed to be the place of the first gathering and erecting of the Christian church after Christ's resurrection, the place of that remarkable effusion of the Spirit of God on the apostles and primitive Christians, and the place whence the Gospel was to sound forth into all the world; the place of the first Christian church, that was to be, as it were, the mother of all other churches through the world; agreeable to that prophecy, Is. 2: 3, 4. "Out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem; and he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people." Thus God chose Mount Zion whence the Gospel was to be sounded forth, as the law had been from Mount Sinai.

VII. The next thing to be observed here, is God's solemnly *renewing the covenant of grace with David*, and promising that the Messiah should be of his seed. We have an account of it in 2 Sam. 7. It was done on occasion of the thoughts David entertained of building God a house. On this occasion God sends Nathan the prophet to him, with the glorious promises of the covenant of grace. It is especially contained in these words, "And thy house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee; thy throne shall be established for ever." Which promise has respect to Christ, the seed of David, and is fulfilled in him only: for the kingdom of

David has long since ceased, any otherwise than as it is upheld in Christ.

That this covenant, now established with David by Nathan the prophet, was the covenant of grace, is evident by the plain testimony of Scripture. Is. 55: 1-3. There we have Christ inviting sinners to come to the waters, &c. And in the 3d verse he says, "Incline your ear and come unto me; hear, and your souls shall live; and I will make with you an everlasting covenant, even the sure mercies of David." Here Christ offers to poor sinners, if they will come to him, to give them an interest in the same everlasting covenant that he had made with David, conveying to them the same sure mercies. But what is that covenant, in which sinners obtain an interest when they come to Christ, but the covenant of grace?

This was the fifth solemn establishment of the covenant of grace with the church after the fall. It was revealed and established all along. But there had been particular seasons, wherein God had in a very solemn manner renewed this covenant with his church, giving forth a new edition and establishment of it, revealing it in a new manner. The first was with Adam; the second with Noah, the third with the patriarchs, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; the fourth was in the wilderness by Moses; and now the fifth is made to David.

This establishment of the covenant of grace, David always esteemed the greatest favor and honor that God had conferred upon him; he prized it, and rejoiced in it above all other blessings of his reign. Observe how joyfully and thankfully he received it, when Nathan came to him with the glorious mes-

sage. 2 Sam. 7 : 18. And so David, in his last words, declares this to be all his salvation, and all his desire. 2 Sam. 23 : 5. "He hath made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things and sure : for this is all my salvation and all my desire."

VIII. It was by David that God first *gave his people Israel the possession of the whole promised land*. I have before shown, how God's giving possession of the promised land belonged to the covenant of grace. This was done in a great measure by Joshua, but not fully. Joshua did not wholly subdue that part of the promised land which was strictly called the land of Canaan, and which was divided by lot to the several tribes ; but there were great numbers of the old inhabitants left unsubdued, as we read in the books of Joshua and Judges : and there were many left to prove Israel, and to be as thorns in their sides. There were the Jebusites in Jerusalem, and many of the Canaanites, and the whole nation of Philistines, who all dwelt in that part of the land which was divided by lot, and chiefly in that which belonged to the tribes of Judah and Ephraim.

And thus these remains of the old inhabitants of Canaan continued unsubdued till David's time ; but he wholly subdued them all. Which is agreeable to what St. Stephen observes, Acts, 7 : 45, "Which also our fathers brought in with Jesus (Joshua) into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drove out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David." They were till the days of David in driving them out ; but David entirely brought them under. He subdued the Jebusites, the whole nation of the Philistines, and all the remains of the seven nations

of Canaan. 1 Chron. 18:1. "Now after this it came to pass, that David smote the Philistines, and subdued them, and took Gath and her towns out of the hands of the Philistines."

After this, all the remains of the former inhabitants of Canaan were made bond-servants to the Israelites. The posterity of the Gibeonites became servants before, hewers of wood and drawers of water for the house of God. But Solomon, David's son and successor, put all the other remains of the seven nations of Canaan to bond-service; at least made them pay a tribute of bond-service. 1 Kings, 9:20-22. And hence we read of the children of Solomon's servants, after the return from the Babylonish captivity. Ezra, 2:55; and Neh. 11:3. They were the children or posterity of the seven nations of Canaan that Solomon had subjected to bond-service.

Thus David subdued the whole land of Canaan, strictly so called. But then that was not one half, nor quarter, of the land God had promised to their fathers. The land often promised to their fathers, included all the countries from the river of Egypt to the river Euphrates. These were the bounds of the land promised to Abraham. Gen. 15:18. "In that same day the Lord made a covenant with Abraham, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates." So again God promised at Mount Sinai. Exod. 23:31. "And I will set thy bounds from the Red Sea even unto the sea of the Philistines, and from the desert unto the river: for I will deliver the inhabitants of the land into your hand; and thou shalt drive them out before thee."

So again, Deut. 11:24. "Every place whereon the soles of your feet shall tread, shall be yours: from the wilderness, and Lebanon, from the river, the river Euphrates, even unto the uttermost sea, shall your coast be." Again, the same promise is made to Joshua, Josh. 1:3, 4. "Every place that the sole of your feet shall tread upon have I given unto you, as I said unto Moses; from the wilderness and this Lebanon, even unto the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and unto the great sea, towards the going down of the sun, shall be your coast." But the land of which Joshua gave the people possession, was but a small part of this land. And the people never had possession of it, till God gave it them by David.

This large country not only included that Canaan which was divided by lot to those who came in with Joshua, but the land of the Moabites and Ammonites, the land of the Amalekites, and the rest of the Edomites, and the country of Zobah. All these nations were subdued and brought under the children of Israel by David. And he put garrisons in the several countries, and they became David's servants, as we have a particular account in 2 Sam. 8: and David extended their border to the river Euphrates, as was promised. "And David smote also Hadadezer, the son of Rehob, king of Zobah, as he went to recover his border at the river Euphrates." And accordingly we read that Solomon his son reigned over all the region on this side of the river. 1 Kings, 4:24. "For he had dominion over all the region on this side the river, from Tiphsha even unto Azzah, over all the kings on this side the river." This Artaxerxes, king of Persia, notices

long after. Ezra, 4 : 20. "There have been mighty kings also over Jerusalem, which have ruled over all countries beyond the river ; and toll, tribute, and custom was paid unto them."

So that Joshua, that eminent type of Christ, did but begin the work of giving Israel the possession of the promised land ; and left it to be finished by that much greater type and ancestor of Christ, even David, who subdued far more of that land than ever Joshua had done. And in this extent of his and Solomon's dominion was some resemblance of the great extent of Christ's kingdom ; which is set forth by this very thing, Psal. 72 : 8. "He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth." See also 1 Kings, 8 : 56.

IX. God, by David, *perfected the Jewish worship*, and added to it several new institutions. The law was given by Moses, but all the institutions of the Jewish worship were not ; some were added by divine direction. So this greatest of all personal types of Christ did not only perfect Joshua's work, in giving Israel the possession of the promised land, but also finished Moses' work, in perfecting the instituted worship of Israel. Thus there must be a number of typical prophets, priests, and princes, to complete one figure or shadow of Christ the antetype, he being the substance of all the types and shadows. Of so much more glory was Christ accounted worthy, than Moses, Joshua, David, Solomon, and all the great prophets, priests, princes, judges, and saviors of the Old Testament.

The ordinances of David are mentioned as of equal validity with those of Moses. 2 Chron. 23 : 18. "Also Jehoiada appointed the offices of the

house of the Lord by the hand of the priests, the Levites, whom David had distributed in the house of the Lord, to offer the burnt-offerings of the Lord, as it is written in the law of Moses, with rejoicing and with singing, as it was ordained by David." The worship of Israel was perfected by David, by the addition he made to the ceremonial law, (1 Chron. 23, &c.) consisting in the several orders and courses into which the Levites were divided, and the work and business to which he appointed them, different from what Moses had done; and also in the divisions of the priests, the sons of Aaron, into four and twenty courses, assigning to every course their business in the house of the Lord, and their particular stated times of attendance there. He also appointed some of the Levites to a new office, that of singers, particularly ordering and regulating them in that office. 1 Chron. 25. "Others of the Levites he appointed by law to the several services of porters, treasurers, officers, and judges; and these ordinances of David were continued thenceforth in the church of Israel, as long as the Jewish church lasted. Thus we find the several orders of priests, and the Levites, the porters, and singers, after the captivity. And we find the courses of the priests appointed by David still continuing in the New Testament: Zacharias the father of John the Baptist was a priest of the course of Abia; which is the same with the course of Abijah appointed by David. 1 Chron. 24 : 10.

Thus David as well as Moses was made like to Christ the son of David, in this respect, that by him God gave in some degree a new ecclesiastical establishment, and new institutions of worship. David



did not only add to the institutions of Moses, but by those additions he abolished some of the old institutions that had been in force till that time; particularly those laws that appointed the business of the Levites, which we have in Numb. 3 and 4: which very much consisted in their charge of the several parts and utensils of the tabernacle. But those laws were now abolished; and they were no more to carry those things, as they had been used to do. But David appointed them to other work instead of it. . Chron. 23 : 26. " And also unto the Levites, they shall no more carry the tabernacle, nor any vessels of it for the service thereof." A sure evidence that the ceremonial law given by Moses is not perpetual, as the Jews suppose; but might be wholly abolished by Christ; for if David, a type of the Messiah, might abolish the law of Moses in part, much more might the Messiah himself abolish the whole. David, by God's appointment, abolished all use of the tabernacle built by Moses, and of which he had the pattern from God; for God now revealed it to David to be his will, that a temple should be built instead of the tabernacle. This was a great presage of what Christ, the son of David, would do when he should come, namely, abolish the whole Jewish ecclesiastical constitution, which was but as a moveable tabernacle, to set up the spiritual gospel-temple, which was to be far more glorious, of greater extent, and was to last for ever. David had the pattern of all things pertaining to the temple shown him, even in like manner as Moses had the pattern of the tabernacle; and Solomon built the temple according to that pattern which he had from his father David, which *he* received from God. 1 Chron. 28 : 11, 12.

“Then David gave to Solomon his son the pattern of the porch and of the houses thereof, and of the treasuries thereof, and of the upper chambers thereof, and of the inner parlors thereof, and of the place of the mercy-seat, and the pattern of all that he had by the Spirit, of the courts of the house of the Lord, and of all the chambers round about, of the treasuries of the house of God, and of the treasuries of the dedicated things.” And ver. 19. “All this, said David, the Lord made me understand in writing by his hand upon me, even all the works of this pattern.”

X. The *canon of Scripture seems to have been farther enlarged* about the close of David's reign by the prophets Nathan and Gad. It appears probable by the Scriptures, that they continued the history of the two books of Samuel from the place where Samuel left it, and finished them. These seem to be called “the book of Samuel the seer, and Nathan the prophet, and Gad the seer.” 1 Chron. 29 : 29. “Now the acts of David the king, first and last, behold, they are written in the book of Samuel the seer, and in the book of Nathan the prophet, and in the book of Gad the seer.”

XI. The next thing I would notice, is God's wonderfully continuing the *kingdom of his visible people in the line of Christ's legal ancestors*, as long as they remained an independent kingdom. Thus it was without any interruption worth notice. Indeed the kingdom of all the tribes of Israel was not kept in that line; but the dominion of that part in which the true worship of God was upheld, who were God's visible people, was always kept in the family of David, as long as there was any such thing as an independent king of Israel; according to his

promise to David; and not only in the *family* of David, but always in that *part* of David's posterity whence Christ was legally descended. So that Christ's legal ancestor was always on the throne, excepting Jehoahaz, who reigned three months, and Zedekiah, as appears in Matthew's genealogy of Christ.

Christ was *legally* descended from the kings of Judah, though not *naturally*. He was both legally and naturally descended from David. He was naturally descended from Nathan the son of David; for Mary his mother was one of the posterity of David by Nathan, as may be seen in Luke's genealogy; but Joseph, the reputed and legal father of Christ, was naturally descended of Solomon and his successors, as we have an account in Matthew's genealogy. Jesus Christ, though he was not the natural son of Joseph, yet by the law and constitution of the Jews, was Joseph's heir; because he was the lawful son of Joseph's lawful wife, conceived while she was his legally espoused wife. The Holy Ghost raised up seed to him. A person, by the law of Moses, might be the legal son and heir of another, whose natural son he was not; as sometimes a man raised up seed to his brother: a brother, in some cases, was to build up a brother's house; so the Holy Ghost built up Joseph's house. Joseph being in the direct line of the kings of Judah, of the house of David, he was in this respect the legal heir of the crown of David; and Christ being legally his first-born son, he was his heir; and so Christ, by the law, was the proper heir of the crown of David, and is therefore said to sit upon the throne of his father David.

The crown of God's people was wonderfully kept in the line of Christ's legal ancestors. When David was old and not able any longer to manage the affairs of the kingdom, Adonijah, one of his sons, claimed to be king, and seemed to have obtained his purpose. All things for a while seemed fair on his side, and he thought himself strong. But Adonijah was not the ancestor of Joseph, the legal father of Christ; and therefore how wonderfully did Providence work here! what a strange and sudden revolution! All Adonijah's kingdom and glory vanished away as soon as it was begun; and Solomon, the legal ancestor of Christ, was established in the throne.

And after Solomon's death, when Jeroboam had conspired against the family, and Rehoboam so conducted, that it was a wonder *all Israel* was not provoked to forsake him, (as ten tribes actually did,) and set up Jeroboam in opposition to him; and though he was a wicked man, and deserved to have been rejected altogether from being king, yet he being the legal ancestor of Christ, God kept the kingdom of the two tribes, in which the true religion was upheld, in his possession. And though his son Abijam was another wicked prince, yet God still continued the crown in the family, and gave it to Abijam's son, Asa. And afterwards, though many of the kings of Judah were very wicked, and horribly provoked God, as particularly Jehoram, Ahaziah, Ahaz, Manasseh, and Amon; yet God did not take away the crown from their family, but gave it to their sons, because they were the ancestors of Christ. God's remembering his covenant established with David, is given as the reason why God did

thus, notwithstanding their wicked lives. Speaking of Abijam's wickedness, it is said, 1 Kings, 15 : 4, "Nevertheless, for David's sake did the Lord his God give him a lamp in Jerusalem, to set up his son after him, and to establish Jerusalem : " so 2 Chron. 21 : 7, speaking of Jehoram's great wickedness, it is said, "Howbeit the Lord would not destroy the house of David, because of the covenant that he had made with David, and as he promised to give a light to him, and to his sons for ever."

The crown of the ten tribes was changed from one family to another continually. First, Jeroboam took it; but the crown descended only to his son Nadab. Then Baasha, who was of another family, took it; and it remained in his posterity but one generation after his death. And then Zimri, who was his servant, and not of his posterity, took it; from whom Omri, who was of another family, took it. The crown continued in his family for three successions; and then Jehu, who was of another family, took it. The crown continued in his family for three or four successions; and then Shallum, who was of another family, took it. The crown did not descend at all to his posterity; but Menahem, who was of another family, took it; and it remained in his family but one generation. Then Pekah, who was of another family, took it; and after him Hoshea, that was still of another family. So great a difference was there between the crown of Israel and the crown of Judah; the one was continued evermore in the same family, and with very little interruption, in one right line; the other was continually tossed about from one family to another. The reason was not because the kings of Judah, at least many of them, were bet-

ter than the kings of Israel; but the one had the blessing in them; they were the ancestors of Christ, whose right it was to sit on the throne of Israel. But with the kings of Israel it was not so; and therefore divine Providence exercised a continual care through all the changes that happened in many generations, and such a long space of time, to keep the crown of Judah in one direct line, in fulfillment of the everlasting covenant made with David, the mercies of which covenant were sure; but in the other case there was no such covenant, and so no such interposing care of Providence.

And here it must not be omitted, that there was once a very strong conspiracy of the kings of Syria and Israel, in the time of that wicked king of Judah, Ahaz, to dispossess him and his family of the throne of Judah, and to set one of another family, even the son of Tabeal, on it; as Is. 7 : 6. "Let us go up against Judah, and vex it, and let us make a breach therein for us, and set a king in the midst of it, even the son of Tabeal." And they seemed very likely to accomplish their purpose; insomuch that the hearts of the people sunk within them; they gave up the cause. It is said, "The heart of Ahaz and his people was moved as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind." And on this occasion God sent the prophet Isaiah to encourage the people, and tell them that it should not come to pass. And because it looked so much like a lost cause to Ahaz and the people, God directs the prophet to give them this sign of it, that Christ should be born of the *legal seed of Ahaz*; as Isaiah, 7 : 14. "Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign: behold a virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call his

name Immanuel." This was a good sign, and a great confirmation of the truth of what God promised by Isaiah, that the kings of Syria and Israel should never accomplish their purpose of dispossessing the family of Ahaz of the crown of Judah, and setting up the son of Tabeal; for Christ the Immanuel was to be of them.

XII. *The building of the temple* was a great type of three things, viz. of Christ, especially his human nature; of the church; and of heaven. The tabernacle seemed rather to represent the church in its moveable, changeable state, in this world. But that beautiful, glorious, costly structure, the temple, that succeeded the tabernacle, seems especially to represent the church in its glorified state in heaven. This temple was built according to the direction and the pattern shown by the Holy Ghost to David, in the place where was the threshing-floor of Ornan the Jebusite, in Mount Moriah, 2 Chron. 3 : 1; the same mountain (and probably in the very same place) where Abraham offered up his son Isaac; for that is said to be in the land of Moriah, Gen. 22 : 2, and was called *the mountain of the Lord*, as this of the temple was, Gen. 22 : 14. "And Abraham called the name of that place Jehovah-jireh; as it is said to this day, In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen.

This was the house where Christ dwelt, till he came to dwell in human nature. That his body was the antitype of this temple, appears from what he says, "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up," speaking of the temple of his body. John, 2 : 19, 20. This continued to be the house of God, the place of worship for his church, till Christ came; the place that God chose, where all

their sacrifices were offered, till the great sacrifice came. Into his temple in this place, the Lord came, even the messenger of the covenant. Here he often delivered his heavenly doctrine and wrought miracles ; here his church was gathered by the pouring out of the Spirit, after his ascension. Luke, 24 : 53. "And they were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God." And (Acts, 2 : 46) respecting the multitudes that were converted by that great effusion of the Spirit on the day of pentecost, it is said, "And they continued daily with one accord in the temple." And the sacred historian, (Acts, 5 : 42,) speaking of the apostles, says, "And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ." And thence the sound of the Gospel went forth, and the church was spread into all the world.

XIII. It is here worthy to be observed, that in Solomon's reign, after the temple was finished, *the Jewish church was risen to its highest external glory.* The Jewish church, as to its ordinances and constitution, is compared to the moon, Rev. 12 : 1. "And there appeared a great wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars. This church was like the moon in many other respects, but especially that it waxed and waned like the moon. From its formation, which was in the covenant made with Abraham, when this moon began to appear, it had been gradually increasing in its glory. This time, wherein the temple was finished and dedicated, was about the middle between the calling of Abraham and the coming of Christ, and now it was full moon After this the glory of the Jewish



church gradually decreased, till Christ came; as I shall have occasion to show more particularly.

Now the church of Israel was in its highest external glory. Now Israel was multiplied exceedingly, so that they seemed to have become like the sand upon the sea-shore. 1 Kings, 4 : 20. Now the kingdom of Israel was firmly established in the right family, the family of which Christ was to come. Now God had chosen the city where he would place his name; and had fully given his people the possession of the promised land. They now possessed the dominion of it all, in quietness and peace, even from the river of Egypt to the great river Euphrates; all those nations which had formerly been their enemies, quietly submitted to them; none pretended to rebel against them. Now the Jewish worship in all its ordinances was fully settled: instead of a moveable tabernacle, they had a glorious temple; the most magnificent, beautiful, and costly structure that ever had been, or has been since. Now the people enjoyed peace and plenty, and sat every man under his vine and fig-tree. 1 Kings, 4 : 20. They were in the height of earthly prosperity, silver being plenty as stones, and the land full of gold and precious stones, and other precious foreign commodities, which were brought by Solomon's ships from Ophir and from other parts of the world. Now they had a king reigning over them who was the wisest of men and probably the greatest earthly prince that ever was: their fame went abroad into all the earth, so that many came from the utmost parts of the earth to see their glory and their happiness.

Thus God was pleased, in one of Messiah's ancestors, remarkably to shadow forth the kingdom of

Christ reigning in his glory. David, a man of war who had shed much blood, and whose life was full of troubles and conflicts, was a more suitable representation of Christ in his state of humiliation, wherein he was conflicting with his enemies. But Solomon, a man of peace, was a representation more especially of Christ exalted, triumphing and reigning in his kingdom of peace. And the happy, glorious state of the Jewish church at that time, remarkably represented two things: 1. A glorious state of the church on earth, in the latter ages of the world; those days of peace, when nation shall not lift sword against nation, nor learn war any more. 2. The future glorified state of the church in heaven. The earthly Canaan was never so lively a type of the heavenly Canaan as then, when the happy people of Israel indeed enjoyed it as a land flowing with milk and honey.

XIV. After this *the glory of the Jewish church gradually declined* till Christ came; yet the work of redemption went on. Whatever failed or declined, God still carried on this work from age to age; this building was advancing higher and higher. It went on, during the decline of the Jewish church, towards a further preparation for the coming of Christ, as well as during its increase; for so wonderfully were things ordered by the infinitely wise Governor of the world, that whatever happened was ordered for good to this general design, and made a means of promoting it. When the Jews flourished, and were in prosperity, he made *that* contribute to the promoting of this design; and when they were in adversity, God made this also contribute to the same. While the Jewish church was in its increas

ing state, the work of redemption was carried on by their increase ; and when they came to their declining state, from Solomon's time till Christ, God carried on the work of redemption by *that*. The very decline itself was one thing that God employed as a further preparation for Christ's coming.

As the moon, from the time of its full, is approaching nearer and nearer to her conjunction with the sun, her light is still more and more decreasing, till at length when the conjunction comes, it is wholly swallowed up in the light of the sun. So it was with the Jewish church from its highest glory in Solomon's time. In the latter end of Solomon's reign, the state of things began to darken, by his corrupting himself with idolatry, which much obscured the glory of this mighty and wise prince ; and troubles also began to arise in his kingdom. After his death the kingdom was divided, and ten tribes revolted, and withdrew their subjection from the house of David, apostatizing also from the true worship of God in the temple at Jerusalem, and setting up the golden calves of Bethel and Dan. And presently after this the number of the ten tribes was greatly diminished in the battle of Jeroboam with Abijah, wherein there fell down slain of Israel five hundred thousand chosen men ; which loss the kingdom of Israel never recovered.

The ten tribes finally apostatized from the true God under Jeroboam. The kingdom of Judah was greatly corrupted, and from that time forward more generally in a corrupt state than otherwise. In Ahab's time the kingdom of Israel not only worshipped the calves of Bethel and Dan, but the worship of Baal was introduced. They had before pre-

tended to worship the true God by these images, the calves of Jeroboam ; but now Ahab introduced gross idolatry, and the direct worship of false gods in the room of the true God ; and soon after, the worship of Baal was introduced into the kingdom of Judah, in Jehoram's reign, by his marrying Athaliah, the daughter of Ahab. After this God began to cut Israel short, by finally destroying and sending into captivity, that part which was beyond Jordan. 2 Kings, 10 : 32, &c. Then Tiglath-Pileser subdued and captivated all the northern parts, 2 Kings, 15 : 29 ; and at last all the ten tribes were subdued by Shalmaneser, and they were finally carried away captive out of their own land. After this also the kingdom of Judah was carried captive into Babylon, and a great part of the nation never returned. Those who returned were but a small number, compared with what had been carried captive ; and for the most part after this they were dependent on the power of other states. They were subject one while to the kings of Persia, then to the monarchy of the Grecians, and then to the Romans. And before Christ's time, the Jewish church was become exceedingly corrupt, overrun with superstition, and self-righteousness. And how small a flock was the church of Christ in the days of his incarnation !

God, by this gradual decline of the Jewish state and church from Solomon's time, prepared the way for the coming of Christ in several respects.

1. The decline of the glory of this legal dispensation made way for the introduction of the more glorious dispensation of the Gospel. The evangelical dispensation was so much more glorious, that the legal dispensation had no glory in comparison

with it. The ancient dispensation, even as it was in Solomon's time, was but an inferior glory, compared with the spiritual glory of the dispensation introduced by Christ. The church, under the Old Testament, was a child under tutors and governors, and God dealt with it accordingly. Those pompous externals are called by the apostle, "weak and beggarly elements." It was fit that those things should be diminished as Christ approached; as John the Baptist, his forerunner, speaking of Christ, says, "He must increase, but I must decrease." John, 3 : 30. It is fit that the twinkling stars should gradually withdraw their glory, when the sun is approaching towards his rising. The glory of the Jewish dispensation must be gradually diminished, to prepare the way for the more joyful reception of the spiritual glory of the Gospel. If the Jewish church, when Christ came, had been in the same external glory as in the reign of Solomon, men would have had their eyes so dazzled with it, that they would not have been likely joyfully to exchange such external grandeur, for only the spiritual glory of the despised Jesus. Again,

2. This gradual decline of the glory in the Jewish state, tended to make the glory of God's power, in the great effects of Christ's redemption, the more conspicuous. God's people being so diminished and weakened by one step after another, till Christ came, was very much like the diminishing of Gideon's army. God told Gideon, that the people with him were *too many* for the conquest of the Midianites, lest Israel should vaunt itself, saying, "My own hand hath saved me." And therefore all that were fearful were commanded to return; and there re

turned twenty and two thousand, and there remained ten thousand. But still they were too many; and then, by trying the people at the water, they were reduced to three hundred men. So the people in Solomon's time were too many, and mighty, and glorious for Christ; therefore he diminished them; first, by sending off the ten tribes; then by the captivity into Babylon; and then they were further diminished by their great and general corruption when Christ came; so that Christ found very few godly persons among them. With a small handful of disciples, Christ conquered the world. Thus high things were brought down, that Christ might be exalted.

3. This prepared the way for Christ's coming, as it made the salvation of those Jews who were saved by Christ, more sensible and visible. Though the greater part of the Jewish nation was rejected, and the Gentiles called in their room; yet a great many thousands of the Jews were saved by Christ after his resurrection. Acts, 21 : 20. Their being taken from so low a state under temporal calamity in their bondage to the Romans, and from a state of so great superstition and wickedness, made their redemption the more sensibly and visibly glorious.

XV. I would here notice the *additions made to the canon of Scripture in or soon after the reign of Solomon*. There were considerable additions made by Solomon himself, who wrote the books of Proverbs and Ecclesiastes, probably near the close of his reign. His Song of Songs, as it is called, is wholly on the subject of Christ and his redemption, representing the high and glorious relation, union, and love, between Christ and his redeemed church.

And the sacred history seems, in Solomon's reign, and some of the next succeeding, to have been enlarged by the prophets Nathan and Ahijah, Shemaiah and Iddo. It is probable that part of the history which we have in the first of Kings, was written by them. See 2 Chron. 9 : 29 ; 12 : 15 ; 13 : 22.

XVI. God's *upholding his church and the true religion through this period*, was very wonderful, considering the many and great apostasies of that people to idolatry. When the ten tribes had generally and finally forsaken the true worship, God preserved the true religion in the kingdom of Judah ; and when *they* corrupted themselves, as they very often did exceedingly, and idolatry was ready totally to swallow up all, yet God kept the lamp alive. When things seemed to be come to an extremity, and religion at its last gasp, he was often pleased to grant blessed revivals by remarkable outpourings of his Spirit, particularly in Hezekiah and Josiah's time.

XVII. God remarkably *kept the book of the law* from being lost in times of general and long-continued neglect of it. The most remarkable instance of this kind was its preservation in the time of the great apostasy, during the greatest part of the long reign of Manasseh, which lasted fifty-five years, and the reign of Amon his son. It was so much neglected, and such a careless and profane management of the affairs of the temple prevailed, that the book which used to be laid up by the side of the ark in the holy of holies, was lost for a long time ; nobody knew where it was. But yet God preserved it from being finally lost. In Josiah's time, when they came to repair the temple, it was found buried

in rubbish. It had been lost so long that Josiah himself seems to have been much a stranger to it. See 2 Kings, 22 : 8, &c.

XVIII. God remarkably *preserved the tribe of which Christ was to proceed*, from being ruined through the many and great dangers of this period. The visible church of Christ, from Solomon's reign, was mainly in the tribe of Judah. The tribe of Benjamin, which was annexed to it, was very small, and that of Judah exceedingly large; and as Judah took Benjamin under his protection when he went into Egypt to bring corn, so the tribe of Benjamin seemed to be under the covert of Judah ever after. And though, on occasion of Jeroboam's setting up the calves at Bethel and Dan, the Levites resorted to Judah out of all the tribes of Israel, (2 Chron. 11 : 13,) yet they were also small, and not reckoned among the tribes. Many of the ten tribes, it is true, on that occasion, for the sake of worshiping God in the temple, left their inheritances in their several tribes and settled in Judah, and so were incorporated with them; yet the tribe of Judah was so much the prevailing part, that they were called by one name, *Judah*. Therefore God said to Solomon, 1 Kings, 11 : 13, "I will not rend away all the kingdom : but will give one tribe to thy son, for David my servant's sake, and for Jerusalem's sake, which I have chosen." So when the ten tribes were carried captive, it is said, there was none left but the tribe of Judah. 2 Kings, 17 : 18. "Therefore the Lord was very wroth with Israel and removed them out of his sight : there was none left but the tribe of Judah only." Whence they were all called *Jews*, a word derived from *Judah*.



This was the tribe of which Christ was to come; and in this chiefly did God's visible church consist, from Solomon's time. This people, over whom the kings who were legal ancestors of Christ, and of the house of David, reigned, was wonderfully preserved from destruction during this period, when they often seemed to be upon the brink of ruin, and just ready to be swallowed up. So it was in Rehoboam's time, when Shishak king of Egypt came against Judah with a vast force. 2 Chron. 12. So it was again in Abijah's time, when Jeroboam set the battle in array against him with eight hundred thousand chosen men; a mighty army! 2 Chron. 13 : 3. Then God wrought deliverance to Judah, out of regard to the covenant of grace established with David, and the victory they obtained was because the Lord was on their side. So it was again in Asa's time, when Zerah the Ethiopian came against him with a yet larger army of a thousand thousand and three hundred chariots. 2. Chron. 14 : 9. On this occasion Asa cried to the Lord, and trusted in him, being sensible that it was nothing with him to help those that had no power. "And Asa cried unto the Lord his God, and said, Lord, it is nothing with thee to help, whether with many, or with those that have no power." And accordingly God gave them a glorious victory over this mighty host.

So again it was in Jehoshaphat's time, when the children of Moab, and the children of Ammon, and the inhabitants of Mount Seir, combined together against Judah with a mighty army, a force vastly superior to any that Jehoshaphat could raise; and Jehoshaphat and his people were greatly afraid: yet they set themselves to seek God on this occasion,

and trusted in him; and God told them by one of his prophets, that they need not fear, nor should they have any occasion to fight in this battle, they should only "stand still and see the salvation of the Lord." And according to his direction, they stood still and sang praises to God; and God made their enemies do the work themselves by killing one another; and the children of Judah had nothing to do, but to gather the spoil, which was more than they could carry away. 2 Chron. 20.

So it was again in Ahaz's time, when Rezin king of Syria, and Pekah the son of Remaliah, king of Israel, conspired against Judah, and seemed to be sure of their purpose; of which we have spoken already. So it was again in Hezekiah's time, when Sennacherib, that great king of Assyria, and head of the greatest monarchy then in the world, came up against all the fenced cities of Judah, after he had conquered most of the neighboring countries. He sent Rabshakeh, the captain of his host, against Jerusalem, who in a very proud and scornful manner insulted Hezekiah and his people, as being sure of victory; and the people were trembling for fear, like lambs before a lion. Then God sent Isaiah the prophet to comfort them, and assure them that their enemies should not prevail; as a token of which he gave them this sign: that the earth, for two years successively, should bring forth food of itself, from the roots of the old stalks, without their ploughing or sowing; and then the third year they should sow and reap, and plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them, and live on the fruits of their labor, as they were wont to do before. See 2 Kings, 19: 29. This is mentioned as a type of what is promised in verses

30, 31. "And the remnant that is escaped of the house of Judah, shall yet again take root downward, and bear fruit upward. For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of Mount Zion: the zeal of the Lord of hosts shall do this." The corn springing again after it had been cut off with the sickle, and bringing forth another crop from the roots, represents the church reviving again, and flourishing, like a plant after it had seemingly been cut down past recovery. When the enemies of the church have done their utmost, and seem to have gained their point; when they have overthrown the church, so that its being is scarcely visible, but is like a living root hid under ground; there is in it a secret life that will cause it to flourish again, and to take root downward, and bear fruit upward. This was now fulfilled. The king of Assyria had already carried captive the ten tribes; and Sennacherib had also taken all the fenced cities of Judah, and ravaged the country round about; Jerusalem only remained: and Rabshakeh had in his own imagination already swallowed that up, as he had also in the fearful apprehensions of the Jews themselves. But God wrought a wonderful deliverance; he sent an angel, that in one night smote a hundred fourscore and five thousand in the enemy's camp.

XIX. In the reign of Uzziah, and the following reigns, God was pleased to raise up a set of *eminent prophets*, who should commit their prophecies to writing, and leave them for the use of his church in all ages. We before observed, that God began a constant succession of prophets in Israel in Samuel's time, and many of these prophets wrote by divine in-

spiration, and so added to the canon of Scripture. But none of them are supposed to have written *books of prophecies* till now. Several of them wrote *histories* of the wonderful dispensations of God towards his church. This we have observed already of Samuel, who is supposed to have written Judges and Ruth, and part of the first of Samuel, if not the book of Joshua. And Nathan and Gad seem to have written the rest of the two books of Samuel: and Nathan, with Ahijah and Iddo, wrote the history of Solomon, which is probably that which we have in the first book of Kings. The history of Israel seems to have been further carried on by Iddo and Shemaiah. 2 Chron. 12 : 15. "Now the acts of Rehoboam, first and last, are they not written in the book of Shemaiah the prophet, and Iddo the seer, concerning genealogies?" And after that by the prophet Jehu, the son of Hanani. 2 Chron. 20 : 34. "Now the rest of the acts of Jehoshaphat, first and last, behold they are written in the book of Jehu, son of Hanani, who is mentioned in the book of the kings of Israel." 1 Kings, 16 : 1, 7. And then it was further continued by the prophet Isaiah. 2 Chron. 26 : 22. "Now the rest of the acts of Uzziah, first and last, did Isaiah the prophet the son of Amos write." He probably did it as well in the second book of Kings, as in the book of his prophecy. And the history was carried on and finished by other prophets after him.

Thus the prophets, even from Samuel's time, had been adding to the canon of Scripture by their historical writings. But now, in the days of Uzziah, God first raised up great prophets, not only to write histories, but to write *books of their prophecies*. The

first of these is thought to be Hosea the son of Beeri, and therefore his prophecy, or the word of the Lord by him, is called the *beginning of the word of the Lord*. Hos. 1 : 2. "The beginning of the word of the Lord by Hosea ;" that is, the first part of that which is written in books of prophecy. He prophesied in the days of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, kings of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam, the son of Joash, king of Israel. There were many other witnesses for God raised up about the same time to commit their prophecies to writing—Isaiah, Amos, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, and probably some others : and so from that time forward God continued a succession of *writing* prophets.

This was a great dispensation of Providence, and a great advance made in the work of redemption, which will appear if we consider that the main business of the prophets was to point out Christ and his redemption. They were all forerunners of the great Prophet. The great end of the spirit of prophecy being given them was, that they might give testimony to Jesus Christ, the great Redeemer, who was to come. Therefore the testimony of Jesus and the spirit of prophecy are spoken of as the same thing. Rev. 19 : 10. "And I fell at his feet to worship him : and he said unto me, See thou do it not : I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus : worship God : for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy." And therefore we find that the main thing that most of the prophets insist upon, is Christ and his redemption, and the glorious times of the Gospel. And though many other things were spoken of in their prophecies, yet they seem to be only as introductory to their prophe-

cy of these great things. Whatever they predict, here their prophecies commonly terminate.

These prophets, inspired by the Spirit of Christ, wrote chiefly to prepare the way for his coming, and to exhibit the glory that should follow. And in what an exalted strain do they all speak of those things! Many other things they speak of in men's usual language. But when they enter upon this subject, what a joyful, heavenly sublimity is there in their language! Some of them are very particular and full in their predictions of these things, and above all, the prophet Isaiah, who is therefore deservedly called the *evangelical prophet*. He seems to teach the glorious doctrines of the Gospel almost as plainly as the apostles did. The apostle Paul therefore takes notice that the prophet Esaias is very *bold*, Rom. 10 : 20 ; that is, as the word is used in the New Testament, very *plain* ; so 2 Cor. 3 : 12 ; we use *great plainness of speech*, or *boldness*, as in the margin.

How plainly and fully does the prophet Isaiah describe the manner and circumstances, the nature and end, of the sufferings and sacrifice of Christ, in the 53d chapter of his prophecy. There is scarcely a chapter in the New Testament itself more full! And how much, and in what an exalted strain does the same prophet speak from time to time, of the glorious benefits of Christ, the unspeakable blessings which shall redound to his church through his redemption! Jesus Christ, of whom this prophet spoke so much, once appeared to him in the form of human nature, the nature he should afterwards take upon him. Isa. 6 : 1. "I saw also the Lord sitting on a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple," &c. This was Christ, as we are express-

ly told in the New Testament. John, 12 : 39-41.

And if we consider the abundant prophecies of this and the other prophets, what a great increase is there of gospel light ! How plentiful are the revelations and prophecies of Christ, compared with what they were in the first period of the Old Testament, from Adam to Noah ; or in the second, from Noah to Abraham ; or to what they were before Moses, or in the times of Moses, Joshua, and the Judges ! This dispensation was also a glorious advance of the work of redemption by the great additions made to the canon of Scripture. Great part of the Old Testament was written now from the days of Uzziah to the captivity into Babylon. And how excellent are those portions of it ! What a precious treasure have those prophets committed to the church of God, tending greatly to confirm the Gospel of Christ ! and which has been of great comfort and benefit to God's church in all ages since, and doubtless will be to the end of the world.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### FROM THE BABYLONISH CAPTIVITY TO THE COM- ING OF CHRIST.

I. BEFORE I enter upon particulars, I would observe three things wherein this period, embracing

nearly six hundred years, is distinguished from the preceding.

1. Though we have no account of a great part of this period in the Scripture history, yet the events of it are *more the subject of Scripture prophecy* than any of the preceding periods. There are two ways wherein the Scriptures give account of the events by which the work of redemption is carried on—*history*, and *prophecy*: and in one or the other of these ways we have in the Scriptures an account how the work of redemption is carried on from the beginning to the end. Though the Scriptures do not contain the proper *history* of the whole, yet the whole chain of great events by which this work is carried on from its commencement to its completion, is found either in history or *prophecy*. And it is to be observed, that where the Scripture is wanting in one of these ways, it is made up in the other. Where Scripture history fails, there prophecy takes place; so that the account is still carried on, and the chain is not broken, till we come to the very last link of it in the consummation of all things.

And accordingly it is observable of this space of time, that though it is so much less the subject of Scripture history than most of the preceding periods, (there being above four hundred years, of which the Scriptures give us no history,) yet its events are more the subject of prophecy, than those of all the preceding periods together. Most of those remarkable prophecies of the book of Daniel, and most of those in Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel, against Babylon, Tyrus, Egypt, and many other nations, were fulfilled in this period.

Hence the reason why the Scriptures give us no



history of so great a part of this time, is not that the events were not so important, or less worthy of notice, than those of the foregoing periods; for they were great and remarkable. But there are several reasons which may be given for it. One is, that it was the will of God that the spirit of prophecy should cease in this period, (for reasons that may be given hereafter;) so that there were no prophets to write the history of these times; and therefore God designing this, took care that the great events of this period should not be without mention in his word. It is observable that the *writing* prophets in Israel, were raised up at the latter end of the foregoing period, and at the beginning of this; for the time was now approaching, when, the spirit of prophecy having ceased, there was to be no inspired history, and therefore no other Scripture account but what was given in prophecy.

Another reason for the suspension of inspired history may be, that God in his providence took care that there should be authentic and full accounts of the events of this period preserved in *profane* history. It is very worthy of notice, that with respect to the events of the five preceding periods, of which the Scriptures give the history, profane history is silent, or gives us but very imperfect accounts. There are many fabulous and uncertain accounts of things that happened before: but the commencement of *authentic* profane history is judged to be about a hundred years before Nebuchadnezzar's time. The learned Greeks and Romans used to call the ages before that, *the fabulous age*; the times after it, *the historical age*. And from about that time to the coming of Christ we have undoubted

accounts in profane history of the principal events: accounts that wonderfully agree with the many prophecies relating to those times.

Thus the great God who disposes all things, took care to give an *historical* account of things from the beginning of the world, through all those former ages concerning which profane history is silent; and ceased not till he came to those ages in which profane history related things with some certainty. And concerning those later times he gives us abundant accounts in *prophecy*, that by comparing profane history with those prophecies we might see the agreement.

2. This last period of the Old Testament seems to have been remarkably *distinguished from all others by great revolutions among the nations of the earth*, to make way for the kingdom of Christ. The time now drawing nigh, wherein Christ, the great King and Savior of the world, was to come, great and mighty were the changes brought to pass in order to it. The way had been preparing for the coming of Christ from the fall of man, through all the foregoing periods; but now, the time drawing nigh, things began to ripen apace for his coming; and therefore divine Providence now wrought wonderfully. The greatest revolutions that any history has recorded, since the flood, occurred in this period. Almost all nations far and near, within the knowledge of the Jews, were overturned again and again. All lands were in their turn subdued, captivated, and as it were emptied, and turned upside down, and most of them repeatedly, in this period; agreeable to that prophecy, Is. 24: 1. "Behold, the Lord maketh the earth empty; he maketh it waste,

and turneth it upside down, and scattereth abroad the inhabitants thereof."

This began with God's visible church, in their captivity by the king of Babylon. And then the cup from them went round to all other nations, agreeable to what God revealed to the prophet Jeremiah, 25 : 15-27. Here special respect seems to be had to the great revolutions in the times of the Babylonish empire. But after that, there were three general overturnings before Christ came, in the succession of the three great monarchies of the world, after the Babylonish empire. The king of Babylon is represented in Scripture as overturning the world; but after that, the Babylonish empire was overthrown by Cyrus, who founded the Persian empire in the room of it; which was of much greater extent than the Babylonish empire in its greatest glory. Thus the world was overturned the second time. And then, the Persian empire was overthrown by Alexander, and the Grecian set up, which was still of much greater extent than his Persian. And thus there was a general overturning of the world a third time. After that, the Grecian empire was overthrown by the Romans, and the Roman empire established; which vastly exceeded all the foregoing empires in power and extent of dominion. And so the world was overturned the fourth time.

These several monarchies, and the great revolutions of the world under them, are abundantly spoken of in the prophecies of Daniel. They are represented in Nebuchadnezzar's image of gold, silver, brass, and iron, and Daniel's interpretation of it, Dan. 2; in the vision of the four beasts, and the an

gel's interpretation of it, Dan. 7. And the succession of the Persian and Grecian monarchies is more particularly represented in the 8th chapter, in Daniel's vision of the ram and the he-goat, and again in the 11th chapter.

Besides these four general overturnings, the world was, as it were, in a continual convulsion through this whole period. Before, the face of the earth was comparatively in quietness; though there were many great wars among the nations, yet we read of no such mighty and universal convulsions and overturnings as there were in this period. The nations of the world, most of them, had long remained on their lees, without being emptied from vessel to vessel, as is said of Moab, Jer. 48 : 11. These great overturnings were because the time of the great Messiah drew nigh. That they were to prepare the way for Christ's coming, is evident by Scripture, particularly by Ezek. 21 : 27. "I will overturn, overturn, overturn it, and it shall be no more, until he come whose right it is, and I will give it him." The prophet, by repeating the word *overturn* three times, has respect to three overturnings; as in Revelation, 8 : 13, the repetition of the word *wo* three times, signifies three distinct woes; as appears by what follows, 9 : 12, "One wo is past;" and 11 : 14, "The second wo is past, and behold the third wo cometh quickly."

It must be noted that Ezekiel prophesied in the time of the Babylonish captivity; and therefore there were three great and general overturnings to come after this prophecy, before Christ came; the first by the Persians, the second by the Grecians, the third by the Romans; and then Christ, whose right it

was to take the diadem, and reign, should come. Here these great revolutions are evidently spoken of as preparatory to the coming and kingdom of Christ. But to understand the words aright, we must note the particular expression—"I will overturn, overturn, overturn *it*;" that is, the diadem and crown of Israel, or the supreme temporal dominion over God's visible people. This God said should be no more: the crown should be taken off, and the diadem removed, as it is said in the foregoing verse. The supreme power over Israel should be no more in the royal line of David, to which it properly belonged, but should be removed away, and given to others, and overturned from one to another; first the supreme power over Israel should be in the hands of the Persians; then it should be overturned, and be in the hands of the Grecians; and then it should be overturned again, and come into the hands of the Romans, and be no more in the line of David, till that very person should come who was the Son of David, whose proper right it was, and then God would give it to him.

That those great revolutions of the nations were all to prepare the way for Christ's coming, and setting up his kingdom in the world, is further manifest by Haggai, 2 : 6, 7. "For thus saith the Lord of hosts, Yet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land: and I will shake all nations, and the Desire of all nations shall come, and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts." See also verse 21-23. It is evident by this, that these commotions, whereby the thrones of kingdoms and their armies were overthrown, and every one came

down by the sword of his brother, were to prepare the way for the coming of him who is the Desire of all nations.

The great changes and troubles that have sometimes been in the visible church of Christ, are compared, Rev. 12 : 2, to the church's being in travail to bring forth Christ; so these great troubles and mighty revolutions were, as it were, the world's being in travail to bring forth the Son of God. The apostle in the 8th of Romans, represents the whole creation as groaning and travailing in pain together until now, to bring forth the liberty and manifestation of the children of God. So the world, as it were, travailed in pain, and was in continual convulsions, for several hundred years, to bring forth the first-born child, and the only begotten Son of God. And those mighty revolutions were as so many pangs and throes in order to it. The world being so long a time kept in a state of war and bloodshed, also prepared the way for the coming of the Prince of peace, as it showed the great need of such a prince, to deliver the world from its miseries.

It pleased God to order it in his providence, that earthly power and dominion should be raised to its greatest height, and appear in its utmost glory, in those four great monarchies that succeeded one another, and that every one should be greater and more glorious than the preceding, before he set up the kingdom of his Son. By this it appeared how much more glorious was his spiritual kingdom than the most glorious temporal kingdom. The strength and glory of Satan's kingdom in these four mighty monarchies, appeared in its greatest height,

for, being the monarchies of the Heathen world, the strength of them was the strength of Satan's kingdom. God suffered Satan's kingdom to rise to so great a height of power and magnificence before his Son came to overthrow it, to prepare the way for his more glorious triumph. Goliath must have on all his splendid armor when the stripling David comes against him with a sling and a stone, for the greater glory of David's victory. God suffered one of those great monarchies to subdue another, and erect itself on its ruins, appearing still in greater strength, and the last to be the strongest and mightiest of all; that so Christ, in overthrowing that, might as it were overthrow them all at once. The stone cut out of the mountain without hands, is represented as destroying the whole image, the gold, the silver, the brass, the iron, and the clay: so that all became as the chaff of the summer threshing-floor.

These mighty empires were suffered thus to convulse the world, and destroy one another. And though their power was so great, yet they could not uphold themselves, but fell one after another, and came to nothing; even the last of them, which was the strongest and had swallowed up the earth. It pleased God thus to show in them the instability and vanity of all earthly power and greatness, thereby the more strikingly to set forth the glory of the kingdom of his Son, which never shall be destroyed. Dan. 2 : 44. "In the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed; and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces, and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever." So greatly does this kingdom differ from all

those kingdoms: they vanish away, and are left to other people; but this shall stand for ever. God suffered the devil to do his utmost, and to establish his interest, by setting up the greatest, strongest, and most glorious kingdoms in the world, before the despised Jesus overthrew him and his empire. Christ came into the world to bring down the high things of Satan's kingdom, that the hand of the Lord might be on every one that is proud and lofty, and every high tower, and every lofty mountain. Isa. 2: 12. And therefore these things were suffered to rise very high, that Christ might appear so much the more glorious in being above them. Thus wonderfully did the great and wise Governor of the world prepare the way for erecting the glorious kingdom of his beloved Son.

3. Another thing for which this last space of time before Christ was particularly remarkable, was the *wonderful preservation of the church through all those overturnings*. This preservation was on some accounts more remarkable through this period, than through any of the foregoing. It was very wonderful that the church, which now was so weak, and in so low a state, and mostly subject to the dominion of Heathen monarchies, should be preserved for five or six hundred years, while the world was so often overturned, and the earth was rent in pieces, and made so often empty and waste, and the inhabitants of it came down so often every one by the sword of his brother; especially considering that the land of Judea, the chief place of the church's residence, lay in the midst of the contending parties, was very much the seat of war amongst them, and was often overrun and subdued. It was sometimes in the hands



of one people, and sometimes another, and very much the object of the envy and hatred of all heathen nations. It was often almost ruined by them, great multitudes of its inhabitants being slain, and the land in a great measure depopulated; and those who had them in their power, often intended the utter destruction of the whole nation. Yet they were upheld; they were preserved in their captivity in Babylon, in all the dangers they passed through under the kings of Persia, in the much greater dangers under the empire of the Greeks, and afterwards when the world was trodden down by the Romans.

Their preservation through this period was also peculiarly remarkable, in that we never read of the church suffering persecution in any former period to any such degree as in this, under Antiochus Epiphanes, of which more hereafter. This wonderful preservation of the church through all these overturnings of the world gives light and confirmation to what we read Psalm 46: "God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; though the waters thereof roar, and be troubled; though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof." Thus I have taken notice of some *general* things wherein this last period of the Old Testament times was distinguished. I come now to consider how the work of redemption was carried on in *particulars*.

I. The first thing that here offers, is the *captivity of the Jews into Babylon*. This was a great dispensation of Providence, and such as never was before.

The children of Israel, in the time of the Judges, had often been brought under their enemies; and many particular persons were carried captive at other times. But never had there been any such thing as destroying the whole land, the sanctuary, and the city of Jerusalem, and all the cities and villages of the land, and carrying the whole body of the people out of their own land, into a country many hundred miles distant, and leaving the land of Canaan empty of God's visible people. The ark had once forsaken the tabernacle of Shiloh, and was carried captive into the land of the Philistines: but never had there been any such thing as burning the sanctuary, utterly destroying the ark, carrying away all the sacred vessels and utensils, breaking up all their stated worship in the land, and the land's lying waste and empty for so many years together. How lively are these things set forth in the lamentations of Jeremiah! The work of redemption was promoted by this remarkable dispensation in the following ways.

1. It finally *cured that nation of their idolatry*. The prophet Isaiah, speaking of the setting up of the kingdom of Christ, chap. 2: 18, mentions the abolishing of idolatry as one thing that should be done to this end: "the idols he shall utterly abolish." When the time was drawing near, that God would abolish Heathen idolatry through the greater part of the known world, as he did by the preaching of the Gospel, it pleased him first to abolish Heathenism among his own people; which he did by their captivity in Babylon. This was a presage of that abolition of idols which God was about to bring to pass by Christ through so great a part of the Heathen world.

This nation, that was addicted to idolatry for so many ages, notwithstanding all reproofs, warnings, corrections, and judgments God inflicted on them for it, were now finally cured. So that however some might fall into this sin afterwards, as they did about the time of Antiochus' persecution, yet the nation, as a nation, never showed any propensity to this sin any more. This was a remarkable and wonderful change in that people, and what directly promoted the work of redemption, as it was a great advancement of the interests of religion.

2. One thing that prepared the way for Christ's coming, and for setting up the glorious dispensation of the Gospel, was the *taking away of many of those things wherein consisted the glory of the Jewish dispensation*. In order to introduce the glorious dispensation of the Gospel, the external glory of the Jewish church must be diminished. This the Babylonish captivity did in many respects.

First, it removed the *temporal dominion* of the house of David, the supreme and independent government of themselves. It took away the crown and diadem from the nation. The time now approaching when Christ, the great and everlasting King of his church, was to reign, it was time for the typical kings to withdraw. As God said by Ezekiel, chap. 21 : 26, "He removed the crown and diadem, that it might be no more, till he should come whose right it was." The Jews henceforward were always dependent on the governing power of other nations, until Christ came, for near six hundred years; except about ninety years, during which space they maintained a sort of independence by

continual wars under the dominion of the Macca-bees and their posterity.

Again, by the captivity, the *glory and magnificence of the temple* were taken away, and the temple that was built afterwards, was nothing in comparison with it. Thus it was meet, when the time drew nigh, that the glorious antitype of the temple should appear, that the typical temple should have its glory withdrawn.

They also lost by the captivity the *two tables* of the testimony delivered to Moses, on which God with his own finger wrote the ten commandments on Mount Sinai. These seem to have been preserved in the ark till the captivity. They were there when Solomon placed the ark in the temple. 1 Kings, 8:9. "There was nothing in the ark, save the two tables of stone, which Moses put there at Horeb." And we have reason to suppose they remained there as long as that temple stood. The Jews speak of them as finally lost at that time; though the same commandments were preserved in the book of the law. These tables also were withdrawn on the approach of their antitype.

Another thing lost was the *Urim and Thummim*. Ezra, 2:63. "And the Tirshatha said unto them, that they should not eat of the most holy things till there should stand up a priest with Urim and Thummim." We have no account that this was ever restored; though the ancient writings of the Jews say the contrary. What this Urim and Thummim was, I shall not now inquire; but only observe, that it was something by which the high priest inquired of God, and received immediate answers from him, or by which God gave forth immediate oracles on particu-

lar occasions. This was now withdrawn, the time approaching when Christ, the antitype of the Urim and Thummim, the great word and oracle of God, was to come.

Another thing that the ancient Jews say was wanting in the second temple, was the *Shechinah*, or cloud of glory over the mercy-seat. This was promised to be in the tabernacle. Lev. 16 : 2. "For I will appear in the cloud upon the mercy-seat." And we read of the cloud of glory descending into the tabernacle; Exod. 40 : 35 ; and so likewise with respect to Solomon's temple. But we have no account that this cloud of glory was in the second temple. And the ancient accounts of the Jews say, that there was no such thing in it. This was needless in the second temple, considering that God had promised that he would fill this temple with glory another way, by Christ's coming into it ; which was afterwards fulfilled. See Haggai, 2 : 7. "I will shake all nations, and the Desire of all nations shall come, and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts."

When Moses built the tabernacle and altar in the wilderness, and the first sacrifices were offered on it, fire came down from heaven and consumed the burnt-offering, as in Lev. 9 : 24 ; also when Solomon built the temple, and offered the first sacrifices. 2 Chron. 7 : 1. And this fire was never to go out, but to be kept alive with the greatest care, as God commanded. Lev. 6 : 13. "The fire shall ever be burning upon the altar ; it shall never go out." And there is no reason to suppose the fire kindled in Solomon's time ever went out till the temple was destroyed by the Babylonians. But then it was extinguished, and never restored. We have no account of its

being given on building the second temple, as we have at the building of the tabernacle and first temple. But the Jews, after their return, were forced to make use of their common fire instead of it, according to the ancient tradition of the Jews. Thus the lights of the Old Testament go out on the approach of the glorious Sun of righteousness.

3. The captivity into Babylon occasioned the *dispersion of the Jews* through the greater part of the known world, before the coming of Christ. For the whole nation being carried away far out of their own land, and continuing in a state of captivity for so long a time, they got possessions, built houses, and settled themselves in the land of their captivity, agreeable to the direction of Jeremiah, in the letter he wrote them. Jer. 29. And therefore, when Cyrus gave them liberty to return to the land where they had formerly dwelt, many of them never returned; they were not willing to leave their settlements and possessions there, to go into a desolate country, many hundred miles distant, which none but the old men among them had seen; and therefore but a small number returned, as we see in the books of Ezra and Nehemiah. Great numbers tarried behind, though they still retained the same religion with those who returned, so far as it could be practiced in a foreign land. Those messengers (Zech. 7) that came to inquire of the priests and prophets in Jerusalem, She-rezer and Regemelech, are supposed to be messengers sent from the Jews that remained still in Babylon.

Those Jews who remained in that country were soon, by the great changes in the world, dispersed into all the adjacent countries. Hence we find that in Esther's time, which was after the return from

the captivity, the Jews were dispersed throughout all parts of the vast Persian empire, which extended from India to Ethiopia. Esth. 3 : 8. "And Haman said unto King Ahasuerus, There is a certain people scattered abroad, and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of thy kingdom." And so they continued dispersed till Christ came, and till the apostles went forth to preach the Gospel. But yet these dispersed Jews retained their religion. Their captivity, as before observed, thoroughly cured them of their idolatry : and it was their manner, as many of them as could, to go up to Jerusalem at their great feasts. Hence we read, Acts 2, that at the great feast of Pentecost, there were Jews abiding at Jerusalem out of every nation under heaven. These had come up from all countries where they were dispersed, to worship at that feast. And hence we find, in their history, that wherever the apostles went preaching through the world, they found Jews. They came to one city, and to another city, and went into the synagogue of the Jews.

Antiochus the Great, about two hundred years before Christ, on a certain occasion, transplanted two thousand families of Jews from the country about Babylon into Asia Minor ; and so they and many of their posterity settled in Pontus, Galatia, Phrygia, Pamphylia, and in Ephesus ; and from thence settled in Athens, and Corinth, and Rome : whence came the synagogues in those places in which the apostle Paul preached.

This dispersion of the Jews through the world before Christ came, in various respects prepared the way for his coming, and setting up his kingdom.

This was a means of raising a *general expecta-*

*tion of the Messiah* through the world, about the time that he actually came. For the Jews, wherever they were dispersed, carried the holy Scriptures with them, and so the prophecies of the Messiah; and being conversant with the nations among whom they lived, they, by that means, became acquainted with these prophecies, and with the expectations of the Jews concerning their glorious Messiah. Hence, the birth of such a glorious person in Judea, about that time, began to be the general expectation of all nations, as appears by the writings of the learned Heathens, which are still extant; particularly the famous poet Virgil, who lived in Italy a little before Christ, has a poem about the expectation of a great prince that was to be born, and the happy times of righteousness and peace he was to introduce; some of it much resembling the language of the prophet Isaiah.

This dispersed state of the Jews also prepared the way for Christ, as it showed the *necessity of abolishing the Jewish dispensation*, and introducing the new one of the covenant of grace. It showed the necessity of abolishing the ceremonial law, and the old Jewish worship: for, by this means, the observance of that ceremonial law became impracticable even by the Jews themselves. The ceremonial law was adapted to the state of a people dwelling together in the same land, where was the city which God had chosen; where was the temple, the only place where they might offer sacrifices; and where alone it was lawful for their priests and Levites to officiate, where they were to bring their first fruits, where were their cities of refuge, and the like. But by this dispersion many of the Jews lived more than a thou-



sand miles distant when Christ came ; which made the observance of their laws of sacrifices, and the like, impracticable. And though their forefathers might be to blame in not going up to the land of Judea when they were permitted by Cyrus, yet the case was now, as to many of them at least, become impracticable ; which showed the necessity of introducing a new dispensation, that should be fitted, not only to one particular land, but to the general circumstances and use of all nations of the world.

Again, this universal dispersion of the Jews contributed to make the *facts concerning Jesus Christ publicly known* through the world. For, as observed before, the Jews who lived in other countries, used frequently to go up to Jerusalem at their three great feasts, from year to year ; by which means they could not but become acquainted with the wonderful things that Christ did in that land. We find that the great miracle of raising Lazarus excited the curiosity of those foreign Jews who came up at the feast of the Passover to see Jesus. John, 12 : 19-21. These Greeks were foreign Jews and proselytes, as is evident by their coming to worship at the feast of the Passover. The Jews who lived abroad among the Greeks, and spoke their language, were called Greeks, Helenists, and Grecians. Acts, 6 : 1. These were not Gentile Christians ; for this occurred before the calling of the Gentiles.

By the same means the Jews who went up from other countries became acquainted with Christ's crucifixion. Thus the disciples going to Emmaus say to Christ, whom they did not then know, (Luke, 24 : 18,) " Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which have come to

pass there in these days?" plainly intimating that the things concerning Jesus were so publicly known to all men, that it was wonderful to find any man unacquainted with them. And so afterwards they became acquainted with the news of his resurrection; and when they returned into their own countries, they carried the news with them, and made these *facts* public through the world, as before they had made the *prophecies* of them.

After this, those foreign Jews who came to Jerusalem took great notice of the pouring out of the Spirit at Pentecost, and the wonderful effects of it; and many of them were converted by it. There were Parthians, Medes, Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Egypt, and the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and the strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians. And so they not only carried back the news of these facts, but Christianity itself, into their own countries with them; which contributed much to the spreading of it through the world.

Again, the dispersion of the Jews opened a door for the *introduction of the apostles* in all places where they came to preach the Gospel. For almost every where they found synagogues of the Jews, where the holy Scriptures were wont to be read, and the true God worshiped; which was a great advantage to the apostles in spreading the Gospel. For their way was, into whatever city they came, first to go into the synagogue of the Jews, (they being of the same nation,) and there to preach the Gospel unto them. And hereby their new doctrine was noticed by their Gentile neighbors, whose curiosity excited them to hear what they had to say; which became

a fair occasion to the apostles to preach the Gospel to them. This is the account we have in the Acts of the Apostles. And these Gentiles had been before, many of them, prepared in some measure, by the knowledge they had of the Jewish religion, of their worship of one God, their prophecies, and expectation of a Messiah. This knowledge they derived from the Jews who had long been their neighbors; which opened the door for the Gospel to have access to them. And the work of the apostles with them was doubtless much easier, than if they never had heard of such a person as the apostles preached, or any thing about the worship of one only true God. In so many respects did the Babylonish captivity greatly prepare the way for Christ's coming.

II. The next particular that I would notice is, the *addition made to the canon of Scripture* in the time of the captivity, in those two remarkable portions, the prophecies of Ezekiel and Daniel. Christ appeared to each of these prophets in the form of that nature which he was afterwards to take upon him. The prophet Ezekiel gives an account of his thus appearing to him repeatedly, as Ezek. 1 : 26. "And above the firmament that was over their heads, was the likeness of a throne, as the appearance of a sapphire-stone, and upon the likeness of the throne was the likeness as the appearance of a man above upon it." So Christ appeared to the prophet Daniel. Dan. 8 : 15, 16. "There stood before me as the appearance of a man. And I heard a man's voice between the banks of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this man to understand the vision." There are several things which make it evident that this was Christ; but I cannot now mention particu-

lars. Christ appeared again as a man to this prophet. Dan. 10 : 5, 6. "Then I lifted up mine eyes and looked, and behold, a certain man clothed in linen, whose loins were girded with fine gold of Uphaz : his body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in color to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude." Comparing this vision with that of the apostle John, Rev. 1 : 13, makes it manifest that this person was Christ. And the prophet Daniel, in the historical part of his book, gives an account of a very remarkable appearance of Christ in Nebuchadnezzar's furnace, with Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. Dan. 3 : 25. "Lo, I see four *men* loose,—and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God."

Christ not only appeared here in the form of human nature, but he appeared in a furnace, saving those persons who believed on him therefrom; by which is represented to us, how Christ, by coming himself into the furnace of God's wrath, saves those that believe in him; and the wrath of God never reaches or touches them, so much as to singe the hair of their head.

These two prophets, in many respects, were more particular concerning the coming of Christ, and his glorious gospel-kingdom, than any of the prophets had been before. They both mention those three great revolutions of the world that should be before he came. Ezekiel is particular in several places concerning the coming of Christ. The prophet Daniel, chap. 9, foretold that it should be seventy weeks, that is seventy weeks of years, or seventy times seven years, which is four hundred and ninety

years from the decree to rebuild and restore the state of the Jews, till the Messiah should be crucified. This must be reckoned from the commission given to Ezra by Artaxerxes, whereby the very particular time of Christ's crucifixion was pointed out, which never had been before. Ezra, 7.

The prophet Ezekiel is very particular in the mystical description of the gospel-church, in his vision of the temple and city, in the latter part of his prophecy. The prophet Daniel points out the order of particular events that should come to pass relating to the Christian church after Christ was come, as the rise of Antichrist, the continuance of his reign, his fall, and the glory that should follow. Thus does the gospel-light still increase, the nearer we come to the time of Christ's birth.

III. The next particular I would mention is, the destruction of Babylon, and the *overthrow of the Chaldean empire* by Cyrus. The destruction of Babylon took place on that night in which Belshazzar the king, and the city in general, were drowned in a drunken festival, kept in honor of their gods, when Daniel was called to read the hand-writing on the wall, Dan. 5 : 30 ; and it was brought about in such a manner, as wonderfully to show the hand of God, and remarkably to fulfill his words by his prophets, which I cannot now particularly relate. Now that great city, which had long been an enemy to the city of God, was destroyed, after it had stood ever since the first building of Babel, which was about seventeen hundred years. If the check which was put to the building of this city at its beginning, whereby men were prevented from carrying it to that extent and magnificence they intended, promoted

the work of redemption, much more did this destruction of it.

This was a remarkable instance of God's vengeance on the enemies of his redeemed church; for God brought destruction on Babylon for the injuries they did to his children, as is often set forth in the prophets. It also promoted the work of redemption, as thereby God's people held captive by them, were set at liberty to return to their own land to rebuild Jerusalem; and therefore Cyrus who did it, is called God's shepherd, Isa. 44, and 45: 1. And these are over and above those ways wherein the setting up and overthrowing of the four monarchies of the world promoted the work of redemption.

IV. What next followed was the *return of the Jews to their own land*, and the rebuilding of Jerusalem and the temple. Cyrus, as soon as he had destroyed the Babylonish, and erected the Persian empire on its ruins, made a decree in favor of the Jews, that they might return to their own land, and rebuild their city and temple. This return of the Jews out of the Babylonish captivity is, next to the redemption out of Egypt, the most remarkable of all the Old Testament redemptions, and most insisted on in Scripture, as a type of the great redemption of Jesus Christ. It was under the hand of one of the legal ancestors of Christ, Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, whose Babylonish name was Sheshbazzar. He was the governor of the Jews, and their leader in their first return out of captivity; and together with Joshua the son of Josedek the high priest, had the chief agency in rebuilding the temple. This redemption was brought about by the hand of Zerubbabel and Joshua the priest, as the redemption out of Egypt

was brought about by the hand of Moses and Aaron.

The return out of the captivity was a remarkable dispensation of Providence. It was remarkable, that the heart of a Heathen prince, Cyrus, should be so inclined to favor such a design. He not only gave the people liberty to return, and rebuild the city and temple, but gave charge that they should be helped with silver and gold, with goods and beasts. Ezra, 1: 4. And afterwards God wonderfully inclined the heart of Darius to further the building of the house of God with his own tribute-money, and to command their bitter enemies, the Samaritans, who had been striving to hinder them, to help them without fail, by furnishing them with all that they needed in order to it, and to supply them day by day. He made a decree that whosoever failed of it, timber should be pulled down out of his house, and he hanged thereon, and his house made a dunghill. Ezra, 6. After this God inclined the heart of Artaxerxes, another king of Persia, to promote the work of preserving the state of the Jews, by his ample commission to Ezra. Ezra, 7. He helped them abundantly with silver and gold out of his own bounty, and offered more, as should be needful, out of the king's treasure-house, commanding his treasurers beyond the river Euphrates to give more as should be needed, unto a hundred talents of silver, a hundred measures of wheat, a hundred baths of wine, a hundred baths of oil, and salt without prescribing how much. He gave leave to establish magistrates in the land; freeing the priests of toll, tribute, custom, and other things, which render this decree by Artaxerxes the most full and ample of any given for restoring Jerusalem; and therefore in Daniel's prophecy this is

called *the decree* for restoring and building Jerusalem ; and hence the seventy weeks are dated.

After this another favorable commission was granted by the king of Persia to Nehemiah. Chap. 2. It was remarkable that the hearts of Heathen princes should be so inclined. It was the effect of *his* power who hath the hearts of kings in his hands, and turneth them whithersoever he will ; and it was a striking instance of his favor to his people.

Another remarkable circumstance of this restitution of the Jews to their own land was, that it was accomplished against so much opposition of their bitter indefatigable enemies, the Samaritans, who, for a long time, with all malice and craft, opposed the Jews, and sought their destruction. One while they were opposed by Bishlam, Mithridath, Tabeel, Rehum, and Shimshai, Ezra, 4 ; and then by Tatnai, Shetharboznai, and their companions, chap. 5 ; and afterwards by Sanballat and Tobiah, as we read in the book of Nehemiah.

We have shown before, how the settlement of the people in this land in Joshua's time promoted the work of redemption. On the same accounts does their restitution belong to the same work. The resettlement of the Jews in the land of Canaan belongs to this work, as it was a necessary means of preserving the Jewish church and dispensation in being, till Christ should come. If it had not been for this restoration of the Jewish church, temple, and worship, the people had remained without any temple, or land of their own, that should be as it were their head quarters, a place of worship, habitation, and resort. The whole constitution, which God had done so much to establish, would have been in dan-



ger of utterly failing, long before the six hundred years had expired, which was from about the time of the captivity till Christ; and so all the preparation God had been making for the coming of Christ, from the time of Abraham, would have been in vain. Now that very temple was built that God would fill with glory by Christ's coming into it, as the prophets Haggai and Zechariah told the Jews to encourage them in building it.

V. The next particular I would observe, is the *addition made to the canon of the Scriptures*, soon after the captivity, by the prophets Haggai and Zechariah, who were prophets sent to encourage the people in their work of rebuilding the city and temple; and the main argument they use to that end, is the approach of the coming of Christ. Haggai foretold that Christ should be of Zerubbabel's legal posterity. This seems to be the last and most particular revelation of the descent of Christ, till the angel Gabriel was sent to reveal it to his mother Mary.

VI. The next thing is the outpouring of *the Spirit of God* that accompanied the ministry of Ezra the priest, after the captivity. That there was such an effusion of the Spirit is manifest by many things in the books of Ezra and Nehemiah. Presently after Ezra came up from Babylon with the ample commission which Artaxerxes gave him, whence Daniel's seventy weeks began, he set himself to reform the vices and corruptions he found among the Jews; and of his great success we have an account in the 10th chapter of Ezra. So that there appeared a very general and great mourning of the congregation of Israel for their sins, which was accompanied with a solemn covenant that the people en-

tered into with God ; and this was followed by a great and general reformation. And the people about the same time, with great zeal, earnestness, and reverence, gathered themselves together to hear the word of God read by Ezra ; and gave diligent attention, while Ezra and the other priests preached to them, by reading and expounding the law, and were greatly affected in the hearing of it. They wept when they heard the words of the law, and set themselves to observe it, and kept the feast of tabernacles, as the Scripture observes, after such a manner as it had not been kept since the days of Joshua the son of Nun. Nehem. 8. After this, having separated themselves from all strangers, they solemnly observed a fast, by hearing the word, confessing their sins, and renewing their covenant with God. And they manifested their sincerity in that transaction by actually reforming many abuses in religion and morals. See Nehem. 9, &c.

It is observable, that it has been God's manner, in every remarkable new establishment of the state of his visible church, to give a remarkable outpouring of his Spirit. So it was on the first establishment of the church of the Jews at their coming into Canaan under Joshua ; so it was now in this second settlement of the church in the time of Ezra ; and so it was on the first establishment of the Christian church after Christ's resurrection ; God wisely and graciously laying the foundation of those establishments in a work of the Holy Spirit, for the lasting benefit of his church, thenceforward continued in those establishments. And this pouring out of the Spirit was a final cure to the nation of that particular sin which just before was especially prevalent,

intermarrying with the Gentiles: for however inclined to it they were before, they ever after showed an aversion to it.

VII. *Ezra added to the canon of the Scriptures.* He wrote the book of Ezra; and he is supposed to have written the two books of Chronicles, at least to have compiled them, if he was not the author of the materials, or all the parts of these writings. That these books were written, or compiled and completed, after the captivity, the things therein contained make manifest; for the genealogies are brought down below the captivity; as 1 Chron. 3: 17, &c. We have there an account of the posterity of Jehoiakim for several successive generations. And there is mention in these books of this captivity into Babylon, as of a thing past, and of things that were done on the return of the Jews after the captivity. 1 Chron. 9. The chapter is mostly filled up with an account of things that came to pass *after* the captivity into Babylon, as appears from comparing it with what is said in the books of Ezra and Nehemiah. And that Ezra was the person who compiled these books, is probable from their concluding with words that we know are the words of Ezra's history: the last two verses of Chronicles being the same as the first two in the book of Ezra.

VIII. Ezra is supposed to have *collected all the books of which the holy Scriptures then consisted*, and to have disposed them in their proper order. Ezra is often spoken of as a noted and eminent scribe of the law of God, and the canon of Scripture in his time was manifestly under his special care. The Jews, from the first accounts we have from them, have always held, that so much of the canon

of Scripture as was then extant, was collected and orderly disposed and settled by Ezra; and that from him it was delivered down in the order in which he disposed it, till Christ's time; when the Christian church received it from them, and have delivered it down to our times. The truth of this is allowed as undoubted.

IX. The work of redemption was carried on and promoted in this period, by greatly *multiplying the copies of the law*, and appointing the constant public reading of them, in all the cities of Israel, in their synagogues. It is evident, that before the captivity there were but few copies of the law. The original was laid up beside the ark; and the kings were required to write out a copy of it for their own use, and the law was required to be read to the whole congregation of Israel once every seventh year. And we have no account of any other stated public reading of the law before the captivity. It is manifest by several things that might be mentioned, that copies of the law were then exceedingly rare. But after the captivity, the constant reading of the law was introduced in every synagogue throughout the land. First, they began with reading the law, and then they proceeded to establish the constant reading of the other books of the Old Testament. And lessons were read out of the Old Testament, as made up of both the law and the other parts of the Scripture then extant, in all the synagogues, which were set up in every city, and wherever the Jews in any considerable number dwelt. Thus we find it was in the time of Christ and the apostles. Acts, 15: 21. "Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every

sabbath-day." This custom is universally supposed, both by Jews and Christians, to have been begun by Ezra. There were doubtless public assemblies before the captivity. They used to assemble at the temple at their great feasts, and were directed, when they were at a loss about any thing in the law, to go to the priest for instruction; and they used also to resort to the prophets' houses: and we read of synagogues in the land before. Psal. 74 : 8. But it is not supposed that they had copies of the law for constant public reading and expounding through the land till afterwards. This was one great means of their being preserved from idolatry.

X. The next thing I would mention is, God's remarkably *preserving the church and nation of the Jews*, when they were in imminent danger of being universally destroyed by Haman, as in the book of Esther. This series of providences was very wonderful in preventing this destruction. Esther was doubtless born for this end, to be the instrument of this remarkable preservation.

XI. After this the *canon of Scripture was further enlarged* in the books of Nehemiah and Esther; the one by Nehemiah himself. Whether the other was written by Nehemiah, or Mordecai, or Malachi, is not of importance for us to know, so long as it is one of those books that were always admitted and received as a part of their canon by the Jews, and was among those books which the Jews called their Scriptures in Christ's time, and as such was approved by him. For Christ often, in his speeches to the Jews, manifestly approves and confirms those books which amongst them went by the name of the *Scriptures*, as might easily be shown.

XII. After this the *canon of the Old Testament was completed and sealed* by Malachi. The manner of his concluding his prophecy seems to imply that they were to expect no more prophecies, and no more written revelations from God, till Christ should come. For in the last chapter he prophesies of Christ's coming. Ver. 2, 3. "But unto you that fear my name, shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth and grow up as calves of the stall. And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be as ashes under the soles of your feet, in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of hosts." Then we read in ver. 4. "Remember ye the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, with the statutes and judgments;" that is, Remember and improve what ye have; keep close to your written rule, as expecting no more additions to it till the night of the Old Testament is over, and the Sun of righteousness shall at length arise.

XIII. Soon after this, the *spirit of prophecy ceased* among that people till the time of the New Testament. Thus the Old Testament lights, the stars of the long night, began apace to hide their heads, the time of the Sun of righteousness now drawing nigh. We before observed, how the kings of the house of David ceased before the true King and head of the church came; and how the cloud of glory withdrew, before Christ, the brightness of the Father's glory, appeared. And now the spirit of prophecy ceased. The time of the great Prophet of God was so nigh, it was time for their typical prophets to be silent.

WE have now gone through the time of which we have any historical account in the writings of the Old Testament: and the last thing mentioned by which the work of redemption was promoted, was the ceasing of the spirit of prophecy.

I now proceed to show how the work of redemption was carried on through the remaining times before Christ. In this we have not the thread of Scripture history to guide us as hitherto; but have three things, the prophecies of the Old Testament, human histories, and some occasional evidence of things which happened in those times, in the New Testament.

XIV. The next particular that I shall mention under this period is, the *destruction of the Persian empire*, and setting up of the Grecian by Alexander. This came to pass about sixty or seventy years after the times wherein the prophet Malachi is supposed to have prophesied, and about three hundred and thirty years before Christ. This was the third revolution in this period, and greater and more remarkable than either of the foregoing. It was very remarkable on account of the suddenness of the conquest by Alexander, and the greatness of the empire he set up, which much exceeded in extent all the foregoing.

This event is much spoken of in the prophecies of Daniel. This empire is represented by the third kingdom of brass in Daniel's interpretation of Nebuchadnezzar's dream. Dan. 2. And in Daniel's vision of the four beasts, it is intended by the third beast that was like a leopard, that had on his back four wings of a fowl, to represent the swiftness of

its conquest, chap. 7 ; and is more particularly represented by the he-goat in the 8th chapter, that came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground, to represent how swiftly Alexander overran the world. The angel himself expressly interprets this he-goat to signify the king of Grecia. Ver. 21. "The rough goat is the king of Grecia ; and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king," that is, Alexander himself.

After Alexander had conquered the world, he soon died ; and his dominion did not descend to his posterity, but four of his principal captains divided his empire between them. Now that being broken, whereas four stood up for it, "four kingdoms stand up out of the nation, but not in his power;" as in chap. 11. The angel, after foretelling the Persian empire, proceeds to foretell Alexander. Ver. 3. "And a mighty king shall stand up, that shall rule with great dominion, and do according to his will." Then he foretells, ver. 4, the dividing of his kingdom between his four captains: "And when he shall stand up, his kingdom shall be broken, and shall be divided towards the four winds of heaven ; and not to his posterity, nor according to his dominion which he ruled : for his kingdom shall be plucked up, even for others besides those." Of these four captains, one had Egypt and the neighboring countries on the *south* of Judea ; and another had Syria and the neighboring countries *north* of Judea ; and these two are called *the kings of the north and of the south*. Dan. 11.

Now this setting up of the Grecian empire greatly prepared the way for Christ's coming, and for the erection of his kingdom ; and more especially as it



*made the Greek language common in the world.* This gave advantage for spreading the Gospel through all nations, with vastly greater ease than if every nation had a distinct language. For though some of the first preachers of the Gospel had the gift of tongues, so that they could preach in any language, yet all had not this particular gift; and they who had, could not exercise it when they would, but only at special seasons, when the Spirit of God was pleased to inspire them in this way. And the churches in different and distant parts of the world, as at Jerusalem, Antioch, Galatia, Corinth, could not have had that communication of which we have an account in the book of Acts, without a common language. After the Grecian empire was set up, many in all these countries well understood the Greek language, which wonderfully opened the door for mutual communication between those churches which were so far separated from one another.

Again, making the Greek language common through so great a part of the world, wonderfully prepared the way for the kingdom of Christ, as it was the language in which the New Testament was to be originally written. The apostles propagated the Gospel through many scores of nations; and if those nations could not have understood the Bible otherwise than as it was translated into so many languages, it would have rendered the spreading of the Gospel vastly more difficult. But by the Greek being made common to all, they all understood the New Testament of Jesus Christ in the language in which the apostles and evangelists originally wrote it. As soon as it was written by its origi-

nal penmen, it immediately lay open to the world in a language commonly understood.

XV. The next thing I notice is the *translating of the Old Testament into the Greek language*, which was commonly called the Septuagint, or the translation of the seventy; and is supposed to have been made about fifty or sixty years after Alexander's conquests. This is the first translation of the Scriptures of which we have any credible account. The canon of the Old Testament had been completed by the prophet Malachi in its original, but about a hundred and twenty years before. Hitherto the Scriptures had remained locked up among the Jews in the Hebrew tongue, which was understood by no other nation; but now it was translated into the Greek, a language commonly understood by the nations of the world.

This translation of the Old Testament is still extant, and is of great use. The Jews have many fables about the occasion and manner of this translation; but the truth of the case is supposed to be, that multitudes of the Jews living in other parts of the world besides Judea, and being born and bred among the Greeks, the Greek became their common language. These not understanding the original Hebrew, they procured the Scriptures to be translated for their use into the Greek; and so henceforward the Jews, in all countries, except Judea, were wont in their synagogues to make use of this translation instead of the Hebrew.

This translation of the Scriptures into a language so commonly understood through the world, greatly prepared the way for Christ's kingdom. For the apostles, commissioned to preach through the world,

made great use of the Scriptures of the Old Testament, and especially of the prophecies concerning Christ. By means of this translation, and by the wide dispersion of the Jews, they had the Scriptures at hand in a language understood by the Gentiles. Hence they principally made use of this translation in their preaching and writings wherever they went, as is evident from the fact, that almost all the numerous quotations out of the Old Testament in their writings, are made in the very words of the Septuagint. The sense is the same as in the original Hebrew, though the words are different. And this translation was principally used in Christian churches through most nations of the world, for several hundred years after Christ.

XVI. The next thing is the wonderful *preservation of the church* when it was eminently threatened and persecuted *under the Grecian empire*. The first time they were threatened was by Alexander himself. When besieging the city of Tyre, he sent to the Jews for assistance and supplies for his army. Out of a conscientious regard to their oath to the king of Persia, they refused ; and he being a man of a very furious spirit, agreeable to the Scripture representation of the rough he-goat, marched against them with a design to cut them off. But when he met the priests going out to him in their priestly garments, God wonderfully turned his heart to spare and favor them, as he did the heart of Esau when he met Jacob.

After this, one of the kings of Egypt, a successor of one of Alexander's four captains, entertained a design of destroying the Jewish nation, but was re-

markably and wonderfully prevented by the interposition of heaven for their preservation.

But their most wonderful preservation in this period was under the cruel persecution of Antiochus Epiphanes, king of Syria, and successor of another of Alexander's four captains. The Jews were at that time subject to the power of Antiochus; and he being enraged against them, long strove to his utmost utterly to destroy them, and root them out—at least all of them that would not forsake their religion and worship his idols. He did indeed in a great measure waste the country and depopulate the city of Jerusalem; profaned the temple, by setting up his idols in some parts of it; and persecuted the people with insatiable cruelty; so that we have no account of any persecution like this before. Many of the particular circumstances of this cruel persecution were very affecting. It began about a hundred and seventy years before Christ. It is much spoken of in the prophecy of Daniel, Dan. 8: 9, 25; 11: 31–38; and in the New Testament, Heb. 11: 36–38.

Antiochus intended not only to extirpate the Jewish religion, but, as far as in him lay, the very nation; and particularly labored to the utmost to destroy all copies of the law. And considering how weak they were, in comparison with a king of such vast dominion, the providence of God appears very wonderful in defeating his design. Many times the Jews seemed to be on the very brink of ruin, just ready to be swallowed up; and their enemies often thought themselves sure of obtaining their purpose. They once came against the people with a mighty army, with a design of killing all, except the

women and children, and of selling these for slaves ; and so confident were they of obtaining their purpose, and others of purchasing, that above a thousand merchants came with the army, with money in their hands, to buy the slaves that should be sold. But God wonderfully stirred up and assisted one Judas, and others his successors, called the Maccabees, who, with a small handful in comparison, vanquished their enemies time after time, and delivered their nation. This also was foretold by Daniel, 11 : 32. Speaking of Antiochus' persecution, he says, " And such as do wickedly against the covenant, shall he corrupt by flatteries : but the people that do know their God shall be strong and do exploits."

God afterwards brought this Antiochus to a fearful, miserable end, by a loathsome disease, under dreadful torments of body and horrors of mind ; which was foretold, Dan. 11 : 45, in these words, " Yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him." After his death there were attempts still to destroy the church ; but God baffled them all.

XVII. The next thing is the *destruction of the Grecian, and setting up of the Roman empire*. This was the fourth revolution in this period. And though it was brought to pass more gradually than the setting up of the Grecian empire, yet it far exceeded that, and was much the greatest and largest temporal monarchy of any age ; so that the Roman empire was commonly called *all the world* ; as in Luke, 2 : 1. " And there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed : " that is, all the Roman empire.

This empire is spoken of as much the strongest and greatest of the four. Dan. 2 : 40. " And the

fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise." Dan. 7: 7, 19, 23. The time when the Romans first conquered and subdued the land of Judea, was between sixty and seventy years before Christ. Soon after this, the Roman empire was established in its greatest extent; and the world continued subject to it henceforward till Christ came, and many hundred years after.

The nations being thus united under one monarchy when Christ came, and when the apostles went forth to preach, greatly prepared the way for the spreading of the Gospel, and the setting up of Christ's kingdom in the world. For the world being thus subject to one government, it opened a general communication, and so opportunity was given for the more swift propagation of the Gospel. There are innumerable difficulties in traveling through nations under different independent governments, which there are not in traveling through different parts of the same realm, or different dominions of the same prince. So the world being under one government, that of the Romans, facilitated the apostles' traveling and the spread of the Gospel.

XVIII. About the same time *learning and philosophy were risen to their greatest height* in the heathen world. Almost all the famous philosophers among the Heathen were after the captivity into Babylon. Almost all the wise men of Greece and Rome flourished in this time. What these philosophers in general chiefly professed as their business, was to inquire wherein man's chief happiness lay,

and how to obtain it. They seemed earnestly to busy themselves in this inquiry, and wrote multitudes of books about it, many of which are still extant; but they were exceedingly divided, there having been reckoned several hundred different opinions which they had concerning it. Thus they wearied themselves in vain, wandering in the dark, not having the glorious Gospel to guide them. God was pleased to suffer men to do the utmost they could do with human wisdom and to try the utmost extent of their understandings to find out the way to happiness, before the true light came to enlighten the world. God suffered these great philosophers to try what they could do for six hundred years; and then it proved by the events of so long a time that all they could do was in vain; the world not becoming wiser, better, or happier under their instructions, but growing more and more foolish, wicked, and miserable. He suffered this, that it might be seen how far reason and philosophy could go in their highest ascent, that the necessity of a divine teacher might more convincingly appear. God was pleased to make foolish the wisdom of this world—to show men the folly of their best wisdom—by the doctrines of his glorious Gospel, which were above the reach of all their philosophy. 1 Cor. 1 : 19–21.

After God had showed the vanity of human learning without the Gospel, he was pleased to make it subservient to the purposes of Christ's kingdom, as a handmaid to divine revelation. An instance of this we have in the apostle Paul, who was famed for his much learning, Acts, 26 : 24, being skilled in the learning not only of the Jews, but also of the philosophers. This he improved to subserve the Gos-

pel ; as he did in disputing with the philosophers at Athens. Acts, 17 : 22, &c. By his learning he knew how to accommodate himself in his discourses to learned men, having read their writings ; and he cites their own poets. Dionysius, a philosopher, was converted by him, and was made a great instrument of promoting the Gospel, and there were many others in that and the following ages, who were eminently useful, by their human learning, in promoting the interests of Christ's kingdom.

XIX. Just before Christ was born the *Roman empire was raised to its greatest height, and also settled in peace*. About four and twenty years before Christ, Augustus Cæsar, the first Roman emperor, began to rule as emperor of the world. Till then the Roman empire had of a long time been a commonwealth under the government of the senate, but now it became an absolute monarchy. This personage, as he was the first, so he was the greatest of all the Roman emperors ; he reigned in the greatest glory. Thus the power of the heathen world, which was Satan's visible kingdom, was raised to its greatest height, after it had been strengthening itself more and more from the days of Solomon, which was about a *thousand years*. Now the heathen world was in its greatest glory for strength, wealth, and learning.

God did two things to prepare the way for Christ's coming, wherein he took a contrary method from that which human wisdom would have taken. He brought his own visible people very low, and made them weak ; but the Heathen, his enemies, he exalted to the greatest height, for the more glorious triumph of the cross of Christ. With a small num-



ber in their greatest weakness, he conquered his enemies in their greatest glory. Thus Christ triumphed over principalities and powers in his cross.

Augustus Cæsar had been for many years establishing his empire, and subduing his enemies, till the very year that Christ was born; when, all his enemies being subdued, his dominion over the world seemed to be settled in its greatest glory. All was established in peace; in token whereof the Romans shut the temple of Janus, which was an established symbol among them of there being universal peace throughout the empire. And this universal peace, which was begun that very year in which Christ was born, lasted twelve years, till the year that Christ disputed with the doctors in the temple.

Thus the world, after it had been, as it were, in a continual convulsion for so many hundred years—like the four winds striving together on the tumultuous raging ocean, whence arose those four great monarchies—was now established in the greatest height of the fourth and last monarchy, and settled in quietness. Now all things were ready for the birth of Christ. This remarkable universal peace, after so many ages of tumult and war, was a fit prelude for ushering the glorious Prince of Peace into the world.

Thus I have gone through the first grand period of the whole space between the fall of man and the end of the world, and have shown the truth of the first proposition: That *from the fall of man to the incarnation of Christ, God was doing those things which were preparatory to Christ's coming, and were forerunners of it.*

## CHAPTER VII.

## IMPROVEMENT OF THE FIRST PERIOD.

Before I proceed to the next period, I would make some few remarks by way of improvement upon what has been said under this.

I. From what has been said, we may strongly argue that *Jesus of Nazareth is indeed the Son of God*, and the Savior of the world; and that the Christian is the true religion, seeing that Christ is the very person so evidently pointed at, in all the great dispensations of divine Providence from the fall of man, and was so undoubtedly in so many instances foretold from age to age, and shadowed forth in a vast variety of types and figures. If we seriously consider the course of things from the beginning, and observe the motions of all the great wheels of Providence, we shall discern that they all tender hither. They are all as so many lines, whose course, if it be observed and accurately followed, will be found to centre here. It is so very plain in many things, that it would argue stupidity to deny it. This Person, sent from God, came into the world with his commission and authority to do his work, and to declare his mind. The Governor of the world, in all his great works towards Jews and Gentiles, down to the time of Christ's birth, has declared it. It is a plain and evident truth, that he who was born at Bethlehem, who dwelt at Nazareth and Capernaum,

and who was crucified without the gates of Jerusalem, must be the great Messiah. Blessed are all they that believe in and confess him, and miserable are all that deny him. This shows the unreasonableness of Deists, who deny revealed religion ; and of the Jews, who deny that this Jesus is the Messiah foretold and promised to their fathers.

Here should any object, that it may be some cunning men contrived this history and these prophecies, on purpose to prove that he is the Messiah, it may be replied, How could such a thing be contrived by cunning men to point to Jesus Christ, long before he was born ? How could they know that any such person would be born ? And how could their subtlety help them to foresee and point out an event that was to come to pass many ages afterwards ? For no fact can be more evident, than that the Jews had those writings long before Christ was born ; as they have them still in great veneration, in all their dispersions through the world. They would never have received such a contrivance from Christians, to prove Jesus to be the Messiah, whom they always denied ; and much less would they have been made to believe that they always had these books in their hands, if they had been an imposition.

II. What has been said affords a strong argument for the *divine authority of the books of the Old Testament*, from the admirable harmony whereby they all point to the same thing. For we may see by what has been said, how all the parts of the Old Testament, though written by so many different penmen, and in ages so distant, harmonize one with another. All agree in one, and centre in the same

event; which it was impossible for any one of them to foreknow, but by divine revelation.

Now, if the Old Testament was not inspired by God, what account can be given of such an agreement? for if these books were written without any divine direction, then none of these penmen knew that there would come such a person as Jesus Christ into the world; his coming was only a mere figment of their own brain: and if so, how happened it that this imagination of theirs, which they foretold without any manner of ground for their prediction, was exactly fulfilled? and especially, how did they all come to agree in it, all pointing exactly to the same thing, though they lived so many hundred years distant from one another? This admirable consent and agreement in a future event, is therefore a clear and certain evidence of the divine authority of those writings.

III. Hence we may learn *how weak and ignorant the objection* is, against the Old Testament being the word of God, because it consists so much of *warlike histories and civil transactions*. Here, say some, we have histories of their kings and rulers, their wars with neighboring nations, and the changes that happened in their state and government: but other nations used to keep histories of their public affairs, as well as the Jews; why then should we think that these histories are the word of God, more than those of other people? What has been said, shows the folly and vanity of such an objection. For hereby it appears that the case of these histories is very different from that of all others. This history alone gives us an account of the original of all things; and this alone deduces things

down to us in a wonderful series from that original, giving an idea of the grand scheme of divine Providence, as tending to its great end. And, together with the doctrines and prophecies contained in it, the same book gives a view of the whole series of the great events of divine Providence, from the origin to the consummation of all things; exhibiting an excellent and glorious account of the wise and holy designs of the supreme Governor in all. No common history has had such penmen. This history was all written by men who came with evident signs and testimonies of their being prophets of the most high God, immediately inspired; and though *histories*, yet containing those great events of providence by which it appears how God has been carrying on the glorious work of redemption from age to age, they are no less full of divine instruction, and of those things that show forth Christ and his glorious Gospel, than the other parts of the holy Scriptures.

To object against a book's being divine, merely because it is historical, is a poor fancy; as if that could not be the word of God which gives an account of what is past; or as though it were not reasonable to suppose that God, in a revelation to mankind, would give us any relation of the dispensations of his own providence. If so, it must be because his works are not worthy to be related; or because the scheme of his government, and the series of his dispensations towards his church, and the world he has made, are not worthy that any record of them should be preserved.

The objection, that it is a common thing for nations and kingdoms to write histories and keep re-

cords of their wars, and the revolutions that come to pass in their territories, is so far from being a weighty objection against the historical part of Scripture, as though it were not the word of God, that it is a strong argument in favor of it. For if the light of nature teaches all civilized nations to keep records of the events of *their* government and the series of their administrations, and to publish histories for the information of others, how much more may we expect that God would give the world a record of the dispensations of *his* government, which doubtless is infinitely more worthy of a history for our information? If wise kings have taken care that there should be good histories written of the nations over which they have reigned, shall we think it incredible that Jesus Christ should take care that his church, which is his kingdom, his peculiar people, should have in their hands a certain infallible history of their nation, and of his government of them?

But for the history of the Old Testament, how wofully ignorant should we have been about many things which the church of God needs to know! How ignorant of God's dealings towards mankind, and towards his church, from the beginning!—of the creation of the world, the fall of man, and the rise and progress of the dispensations of grace towards fallen mankind! We should have known nothing how God at first set up a church in the world, and how it was preserved; after what manner he governed it from the beginning; how the light of the Gospel first began to dawn in the world; how it increased, and how things were preparing for the coming of Christ.

If we are Christians, we belong to this great building of God ; and but for the history of the Old Testament, we should never have known what was the first occasion of God's going about this building, how the foundation of it was laid, and how it has gone on from the beginning. The times of the history of the Old Testament are mostly such as no other history includes ; and therefore, if God had not preserved an account of these things in his word, we should have been wholly without them.

Those that object against the authority of the Old Testament history, may as well object against Moses' account of the creation ; for, in the former, we have a history of a work no less important, viz. the work of redemption. Nay, this is a far greater and more glorious work. If it be inquired which of the two works, that of creation, or that of providence, is the greatest ? it must be answered, the work of providence ; but the work of redemption is the greatest of the works of providence. And let those who make this objection, consider what part of the Old Testament history can be spared, without making a great breach in that thread or series of events by which this glorious work has been carried on. This leads me to observe,

IV. That, from what has been said, we may see much of the *wisdom of God in the structure of the Scriptures of the Old Testament*. Let us briefly take a view of the several parts of it, and of the need there was of them.

It was necessary, for instance, that we should have some account of the creation of the world, of our first parents, and their primitive state ; of the fall, of the old world and its degeneracy ; of the

universal deluge, and the origin of nations after this destruction of mankind.

It seems necessary, moreover, that there should be some account of the succession of the church of God from the beginning. God suffered all the world to degenerate, and took one nation only to be his people, to preserve the true worship and religion till the Savior of the world should come. In them the world was gradually prepared for that great light, and those wonderful things of which he was to be the author. Thus they were a typical nation, that in them God might shadow forth and teach, as under a veil, all the future glories of the Gospel. It was therefore necessary that we should have some account of this ; how it was first effected by the call of Abraham, and by their being bond-slaves in Egypt, and how they were brought to Canaan. It was necessary that we should have some account of the revelation which God made of himself to that people, in giving their law, in the appointment of their typical worship, wherein the Gospel is veiled, and of the formation of their civil and ecclesiastical state.

It seems necessary that we should have some account of their being actually brought to Canaan, the country promised them, and where they always dwelt ; that we should have a history of the successions of the church of Israel, and of those providences towards them, which were most considerable and fullest of gospel mystery ; that we should have some account of the promised external glory of that nation under David and Solomon, and a very particular account of David, whose history is so full of the Gospel, and in whom began the race of their



kings; and that we should have some account of the building of the temple, which was also full of gospel mystery.

And it is of consequence, that we should have some account of Israel's separation from Judah, and of the ten tribes' captivity and utter rejection, and therefore a brief history of them till that time; that we should have an account of the succession of the kings of Judah, and of the church, till their captivity into Babylon; of their return from captivity, and re-settlement in their own land, with the origin of the last state of the church before Christ came.

A little consideration will convince any one, that all these things were necessary, and that none of them could be spared; and in the general, that it was necessary we should have a history of God's church till the times reached by human histories. It was important that we should have an inspired history of those times of the Jewish church, wherein there existed a more extraordinary intercourse between God and them, while he used to dwell among them as it were visibly, revealing himself by the Shechinah, by Urim and Thummim, and by prophecy, and so more immediately to order their affairs. And it was necessary that we should have, in prophecy, some account of the great dispensations of God after the finishing of inspired history; for which it was needful there should be raised up a number of prophets, who should foretell the coming of the Son of God, and the nature and glory of his kingdom, as so many harbingers to make way for him, and that their prophecies should remain in the church.

It was also desirable that the church should have

a book of divine songs given by inspiration from God, wherein there should be a lively representation of the true spirit of devotion, of faith, hope, and divine love, of joy, resignation, humility, obedience, repentance, &c. as in the Psalms; also that we should have from God such books of moral instruction as those of Proverbs and Ecclesiastes, relating to the affairs and state of mankind, and the concerns of human life, containing rules of true wisdom and prudence for our conduct in all circumstances; and that we should have particularly a song respecting the great love between Christ and his spouse the church, adapted to the disposition and holy affections of a true Christian soul towards Christ, and representing his grace and marvelous love to, and delight in his people, as in Solomon's Song. It is important that we should have a book to teach us how to conduct ourselves under affliction, seeing the church of God here is in a militant state, and God's people through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of heaven. The church is for a long time under trouble, meets with fiery trials and extreme sufferings, before her time of peace and rest in the latter ages of the world. Therefore God has given us a book most proper in these circumstances, the book of Job; and though written on occasion of the afflictions of a particular saint, it was probably at first given to the church in Egypt under her afflictions there; and is made use of by the Apostle to comfort Christians under persecutions. James, 5: 11. "Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful and of tender mercy." God was also pleased, in this book of Job, to give some view of

the ancient divinity before the giving of the law.

Thus, even from this brief review, I think it appears that every part of the Scriptures of the Old Testament is very useful and necessary, and no part of it can be spared without loss to the church. And therefore the wisdom of God is conspicuous in ordering that the Scriptures of the Old Testament should consist of those very books of which they do consist.

Before I dismiss this point, I would add, that it is very observable that the history of the Old Testament is large and particular where the great work of redemption required it; even where there was most done towards this work, most to typify Christ, and to prepare the way for him. Thus it is very particular in the history of Abraham and the other patriarchs; but very short in the account of the time which the children of Israel spent in Egypt. It is large in the account of the redemption out of Egypt, and the first settling of the affairs of the Jewish church and nation in the time of Moses and Joshua; but much shorter in the times of the Judges. So again, it is large and particular in the times of David and Solomon, and then very short in the history of the ensuing reigns. Thus the accounts are large or short, just as there is more or less of the work of redemption to be seen in them.

V. From what has been said, we may see that *Christ and his redemption are the great subject of the whole Bible*. Concerning the New Testament, the matter is plain; and by what has been said, it appears to be so also with respect to the Old. Christ and his redemption is the great subject of the prophecies, as well as the songs, of the Old Testament, as

has been shown ; and the moral rules and precepts are all given in subordination to him. Christ and his redemption are also the great subject of the history of the Old Testament from the beginning all along ; and even the history of the creation is given as an introduction to the history of redemption that immediately follows it. The whole book, both Old Testament and New, is filled up with the Gospel, only with this difference, that the Old Testament contains the Gospel under a veil, but the New contains it unveiled, so that we may see the glory of the Lord with open face.

VI. By what has been said, we may see the *usefulness and excellency of the Old Testament*. Some are ready to look on it as being out of date, and as if we, in these days of the Gospel, have but little to do with it. But this is a very great mistake, arising from a want of observing the nature and design of the Old Testament, which, if it were observed, would appear full of the Gospel of Christ, and would in an excellent manner illustrate and confirm the glorious doctrines and promises of the New Testament. Those parts of the Old Testament which are commonly looked upon as containing the least divine instruction, are mines and treasures of gospel knowledge ; and the reason why they are thought to contain so little is, that persons do but superficially read them. The treasures which are hid underneath are not observed. They only look on the top of the ground and suddenly pass a judgment that there is nothing there. But they never dig into the mine : if they did, they would find it richly stored with what is more valuable than silver and gold, and would be abundantly requited for their pains.

What has been said may show us what a precious treasure God has committed into our hands, in that he has given us the Bible. How little do most persons consider what a privilege they enjoy, in the possession of that holy book, which they have in their hands, and may converse with as they please. What an excellent book is this, and how far exceeding all human writings ! It reveals God to us, and gives us a view of the grand design and glorious scheme of Providence from the beginning of the world, either in history or prophecy. It reveals the great Redeemer, his glorious redemption, and the various steps by which God accomplishes it from the foundation to the top-stone ! Shall we prize a history which gives us a clear account of some great earthly prince or mighty warrior, as of an Alexander, a Cæsar, or a Marlborough ? and shall we not prize the history that God gives us of the glorious kingdom of his Son Jesus Christ, the Prince and Savior, and of the great transactions of that King of kings, and Lord of armies, the Lord mighty in battle ; and what he has wrought for the redemption of his chosen people ?

VII. What has been said may make us sensible how much most *persons are to blame for their inattentive, unobservant way of reading the Scriptures.* How much do the Scriptures contain, if it were but observed ! The Bible is the most comprehensive book in the world. But what will this avail to us, if we read it without observing what is the drift of the Holy Ghost in it ? The Psalmist, Psalm 119 : 18, begs of God that he would enlighten his eyes that he might "behold wondrous things out of his law." The Scriptures are full of wondrous things. Those his-

tories which are too commonly read as if they were only private concerns of particular persons, such as of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph; of Ruth, Joshua, the Judges, David, and the Israelitish princes, are accounts of vastly greater things, and of far more extensive concern.

The histories of Scripture are but too commonly read as if they were written only to entertain men's fancies, and the infinitely great things contained in them are passed over without notice. Whatever treasures the Scriptures contain, we shall be never the better for them if we do not observe them. He who has a Bible, and does not observe what it contains, is like a man who has a box of silver and gold, and does not know it. He will be never the better for his treasure, and so might as well be without it. He who has plenty of the choicest food stored up in his house, and does not know it, will never taste what he has, and will be as likely to starve as if his house were empty.

VIII. What has been said may show us *how great a person is Jesus Christ, and how great his errand into the world*, seeing there was so much done to prepare the way for his coming. God had been preparing the way for him through all ages of the world from the very beginning. If we had notice of a stranger being about to come into a country, and should observe that great preparation was made for him, alterations made in the state of the whole country, many hands employed, persons of great note engaged in the preparation; and all the affairs and concerns of the country so ordered as to be subservient to the design of entertaining him; it would be natural for us to think, this is some extraordinary per-

son, and it is some very great business upon which he is coming. How great a person then must he be, for whose coming the great God of heaven and earth, and Governor of all things, employed four thousand years in preparing the way! Soon after the world was created, and from age to age, he has been doing great things, bringing mighty events to pass, accomplishing wonders without number, often overturning the world in order to it. He has been causing every thing in the state of mankind, and all revolutions and changes in the habitable world, from generation to generation, to be subservient to this great design. Surely this must be some great and extraordinary person, and a great work indeed it must needs be for which he came.

We read, Matt. 21 : 8-10, when Christ was coming into Jerusalem, and multitudes ran before him, having cut down branches of palm-trees, and strewed them in the way; and others spread their garments in the way, crying, *Hosanna to the Son of David*, that the whole city was moved, saying, Who is this? They wondered who that extraordinary person should be, that such preparation should be made for him. But if we consider what great things were done in all ages to prepare the way for Christ's coming, how the world was often overturned for it, much more may we cry out, Who is this? What great person is this? and say, as Psalm 24 : 8, 10, *Who is this King of glory*, that God should show him such respect, and confer on him such honor? Surely he is honorable in God's eyes, and greatly beloved; and surely it is a grand errand upon which he is sent.

**PERIOD II.****FROM CHRIST'S INCARNATION TO HIS  
RESURRECTION.**

Having shown how the work of redemption was carried on through the first period, from the fall of man to the incarnation of Christ, I come now to the second period, the time of Christ's humiliation, or the space from his incarnation to his resurrection. And this is the most remarkable period of all time. Though it was but between thirty and forty years, yet more was done in it than had been done from the beginning of the world to that time. We have observed that all events from the fall to the incarnation of Christ were only preparatory for what was now done. And it may also be observed, that what was done before the beginning of time in the eternal counsels between the persons of the blessed Trinity, chiefly respected this period. We therefore now proceed to consider the *second proposition*, viz.

*That during the time of Christ's humiliation, from his incarnation to his resurrection, the purchase of redemption was made.*

Though many things had been done in the work of redemption, though millions of sacrifices had been offered; yet nothing was done to *purchase* redemption before Christ's incarnation. No part of the purchase was made, no part of the price was offered



till now. But as soon as Christ was incarnate, the purchase began. And the whole time of Christ's humiliation, till the morning that he rose from the dead, was taken up in this purchase. Then the purchase was entirely and completely finished. As nothing was done before Christ's incarnation, so nothing was done after his resurrection, to purchase redemption for men. Nor will there ever be any thing more done to all eternity. That very moment when the human nature of Christ ceased to remain under the power of death, the utmost farthing was paid of the price of salvation for every one of the redeemed.

But for the more orderly and regular consideration of the great things done by our Redeemer to purchase redemption for us, I would speak of *his becoming incarnate to capacitate himself for his purchase*—and of *the purchase itself*.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### OF CHRIST'S INCARNATION.

Christ became incarnate, or, which is the same thing, became man, to put himself in a capacity for working out our redemption. For though Christ, as God, was infinitely sufficient for the work, yet to his being in an immediate capacity for it, it was needful that he should not only be God, but man. If

Christ had remained only in the divine nature, he would not have been in a capacity to have purchased our salvation; not from any imperfection of the divine nature, but by reason of its absolute and infinite perfection: for Christ, merely as God, was not capable either of that obedience or suffering that was needful. The divine nature is not capable of *suffering*; for it is infinitely above all suffering. Neither is it capable of *obedience* to that law which was given to man. It is as impossible that one who is only God, should obey the law that was given to man, as it is that he should suffer man's punishment.

And it was necessary not only that Christ should take upon him a *created* nature, but that he should take upon him *our* nature. It would not have sufficed for Christ to have become an *angel*, and to have obeyed and suffered in the angelic nature. But it was necessary that he should become a *man*, upon three accounts.

1. It was needful in order to answer the law, that *the very nature to which the law was given should obey it*. Man's law could not be answered but by being obeyed by man. God insisted upon it, that the law which he had given to man should be honored, and fulfilled by the nature of man, otherwise the law could not be answered for men. The words, "Thou shalt not eat thereof," &c. were spoken to mankind, to the human nature; and therefore the human nature must fulfill them.

2. It was needful to answer the law, that *the nature that sinned should die*. These words, "Thou shalt surely die," respect the human nature. The same nature to which the command was given,

was that to which the threatening was directed.

3. God saw fit that *the same world which was the stage of man's fall and ruin, should also be the stage of his redemption.* We read often of Christ's coming into the world to save sinners, and of God's sending him into the world for this purpose. It was needful that he should come into this sinful, miserable, undone world, to restore and save it. For man's recovery, it was needful that he should come down to man, to man's proper habitation, that he should tabernacle with us. John, 1 : 14. "The word was made flesh and dwelt among us."

Concerning the incarnation of Christ, I would observe these following things.

I. *The incarnation itself*; in which especially two things are to be considered.

1. His *conception*; which was in the womb of one of the race of mankind, whereby he became truly the Son of man, as he was often called. He was one of the posterity of Adam, a child of Abraham, and a son of David, according to God's promise. But his conception was not in the way of ordinary generation, but by the power of the Holy Ghost. Christ was formed in the womb of the virgin, of the substance of her body, by the power of the Spirit of God. So that he was the immediate son of the woman, but not the immediate son of any man; and so was the seed of the woman, and the son of a virgin, one that had never known man.

2. His *birth*. Though the conception of Christ was supernatural, yet after he was conceived, his human nature was gradually perfected in the womb of the virgin, in a way of natural progress; and so

his birth was in the way of nature. But his conception being supernatural, by the power of the Holy Ghost, he was both conceived and born without sin.

II. The second thing I would observe concerning the incarnation of Christ, is *the fullness of the time* in which it was accomplished. It was after things had been preparing for it from the very fall of mankind, and when all things were ready. It came to pass at a time which in infinite wisdom was the most fit and proper. Gal. 4: 4. "But when the fullness of time was come. God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law."

It was now the most proper time on every account. Any time before the flood would not have been so fit a time. For then the mischief and ruin that the fall brought on mankind were not so fully seen. The curse did not so fully come on the earth before the flood, as it did afterwards: for though the ground was cursed in a great measure before, yet it pleased God that the curse should once, before the restoration by Christ, be executed in a universal destruction, as it were of the very form of the earth, that the dire effects of the fall might be seen before the recovery. Though mankind were mortal before the flood, yet their lives were almost a thousand years in length, a kind of immortality in comparison with what the life of man is now. It pleased God that the curse, "Dust thou art, and unto dust thou shalt return," should have its full accomplishment, and be executed in its greatest degree on mankind, before the Redeemer came to purchase a never-ending life.

It would not have been so fit a time for Christ to

come, before Moses; for till then mankind were not so universally apostatized from the true God; they were not fallen universally into heathenish darkness; and so the need of Christ, the light of the world, was not so evident. The woful consequence of the fall with respect to man's mortality, was not so fully manifest till then; for man's life was not so shortened, as to be reduced to the present standard, till about Moses' time.

It was most fit that the time of the Messiah's coming should not be till all nations, but the children of Israel, had lain long in heathenish darkness; that the remedilessness of their disease might by long experience be seen, and so the absolute necessity of the heavenly Physician.

Another reason why Christ did not come soon after the flood, probably was, that the earth might be full of people; that he might have the more extensive kingdom; that the effects of his light, power, and grace might be glorified; and that his victory over Satan might be attended with the more glory in the multitude of his conquests. It was also needful that the coming of Christ should be many ages after Moses, that the church might be prepared by the Messiah's being long prefigured, foretold, and expected. It was not proper that Christ should come before the Babylonish captivity, because Satan's kingdom was not then come to its height. The heathen world before that consisted of lesser kingdoms. But God saw fit that the Messiah should come in the time of one of the four great monarchies. Nor was it proper that he should come in the time of the Babylonish, the Persian, or the Grecian monarchy. It was the will of God that his Son should make his

appearance in the world in the time of the Roman, the greatest and strongest monarchy, which was Satan's visible kingdom in the world; that, by overcoming this, he might visibly overcome Satan's kingdom in its greatest strength and glory, and so obtain the more complete triumph over Satan himself.

It was not proper that Christ should come before the Babylonish captivity. For, before that, we have not histories of the state of the heathen world, to give us an idea of the need of a Savior. Besides, learning did not much flourish, and so there had not been opportunity to show the insufficiency of human learning and wisdom to reform and save mankind. Again, the Jews were not dispersed over the world, as they were afterwards; and so things were not prepared in this respect for the coming of Christ. The necessity of abolishing the Jewish dispensation was not then so apparent as it was afterwards, by reason of the dispersion of the Jews; neither was the way prepared for the propagation of the Gospel, as it was afterwards, by the same dispersion. Many other things might be mentioned, by which it would appear that no other time before that very time in which Christ came, would have been proper for his appearing.

III. The next thing that I would observe concerning the incarnation of Christ, is *the greatness of this event*. Christ's incarnation was a greater and more wonderful thing than ever had yet come to pass. The creation of the world was a very great thing, but not so great as the incarnation of Christ. It was a great thing for God to make the creature, but not so great as for the Creator himself to be

come a creature. We have spoken of many great things that were accomplished between the fall of man and the incarnation of Christ; but God's becoming man was greater than all. Then the greatest person was born that ever was or ever will be.

IV. Next observe, *the remarkable circumstances* of the incarnation of Christ. He was born of a virgin, pious and holy; but poor, as appeared by her offering at her purification. Luke, 2 : 24. "And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, a pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons." Which refers to Lev. 5 : 7. "And if he be not able to bring a lamb, then he shall bring two turtle-doves, or two young pigeons." And this poor virgin was espoused to a husband who was but a poor man. Though they were both of the royal family of David, which was the most honorable, and Joseph was the rightful heir to the crown; yet the family was reduced to a very low state; which is represented by the tabernacle of David being fallen. Amos, 9 : 11. "In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof, and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old."

He was born in the town of Bethlehem, as was foretold, Mich. 5 : 2; and there was a very remarkable providence of God to bring about the fulfillment of this prophecy, the taxing of all the world by Augustus Cæsar. Luke, 2. He was born in a very low condition, even in a stable, and laid in a manger.

V. Observe *the concomitants of this great event.*

1. *The return of the Spirit; which indeed began*

a little before, but yet was given on occasion of his birth. I have before observed how the spirit of prophecy ceased, not long after Malachi. From about the same time visions and immediate revelations also ceased. But on this occasion they are granted anew, and the Spirit in these operations returns again. The first revealed instance of its restoration is the vision of Zacharias, the father of John the Baptist. Luke, 1. The next is the vision which the Virgin Mary had. The third the vision which Joseph had. Matt. 1. Then the Spirit was given to Elizabeth. Luke, 1 : 41. Next, it was given to Mary, as appears by her song. Luke, 1 : 46. Then to Zacharias again. Verse 64. Then it was sent to the shepherds. Luke, 2 : 9. Then it was given to Simeon. Luke, 2 : 25. Then to Anna. Verse 36. Then to the wise men in the east. Then to Joseph again, directing him to flee into Egypt; and after that directing his return.

2. The next concomitant of Christ's incarnation is, the *great notice taken of it in heaven and on earth*. How it was noticed by the glorious inhabitants of the heavenly world, appears by their joyful songs on this occasion, heard by the shepherds in the night. This was the greatest event of providence that ever the angels had beheld. We read of their singing praises when they saw the formation of this lower world. Job, 38 : 7. "When the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy." And so they do, on this much greater occasion, the birth of the Son of God, who is the Creator of the world.

The glorious angels had all along expected this event. They had taken great notice of the prophe-



cies and promises of these things ; for we are told that they desire to look into the affairs of redemption 1 Pet. 1 : 12. They had been the ministers of Christ in this work, in all the several steps of it, from the very fall of man ; as in God's dealings with Abraham, with Jacob, and with the Israelites. And doubtless they had long joyfully expected the coming of Christ ; but now they see it accomplished, and therefore greatly rejoice, and sing praises on this occasion.

Notice was taken of it by Elizabeth and the virgin Mary before the birth of Christ ; not to say by John the Baptist before he was born, when he leaped in his mother's womb as it were for joy, at the voice of the salutation of Mary. Elizabeth and Mary most joyfully praise God together when they meet, about to become mothers of Christ and his forerunner, filled with the Holy Spirit. And afterwards what joyful notice is taken of this event by the shepherds, and by those holy persons Zacharias, Simeon, and Anna ! How do they praise God on the occasion ! Thus the church of God in heaven, and on earth, unite in their joy and praise.

Great part of the universe takes joyful notice of the incarnation of Christ. Heaven takes notice of it, and the inhabitants sing for joy. This lower world, both Jews and Gentiles, take notice of it. It pleased God to put honor on his Son, by wonderfully stirring up some of the wisest of the Gentiles to come a long journey to see and worship him at his birth. They were led by a miraculous star, signifying the birth of that glorious person who is the bright and morning star, going before and leading them to the very place where the young child

was. Some think they were instructed by the prophecy of Balaam, who dwelt in the eastern parts, and who foretold Christ's coming as a star that should rise out of Jacob. Or they might be excited by the general expectation of the Messiah's coming about that time, from the prophecies the Jews had of him in their dispersions in all parts of the world.

3. The next concomitant of the birth of Christ was his circumcision. But this may more properly be spoken of under another head.

4. Another circumstance was his first coming into the second temple, when an infant, on occasion of the purification of the blessed virgin. We read, Hag. 2: 7, "The Desire of all nations shall come, and I will fill this house (or temple) with glory." And in Mal. 3: 1. "The Lord whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant." And now was the first instance of the fulfillment of these prophecies.

5. The last concomitant I shall mention is the *sceptre's departing from Judah*, in the death of Herod the Great. The sceptre had never totally departed from Judah till now. Judah's sceptre was greatly diminished in the revolt of the ten tribes in Jeroboam's time; and the sceptre departed from Israel or Ephraim at the time of the captivity of the ten tribes by Shalmaneser. But it remained in the tribe of Judah, under the kings of the house of David. And when the tribes of Judah and Benjamin were carried captive by Nebuchadnezzar, the sceptre of Judah ceased for a little while, till the return from the captivity under Cyrus; and then, though they were not an independent government, as they had been before, but owed fealty to the kings of Persia; yet

their governor was of themselves, who had the power of life and death, and they were governed by their own laws ; and so Judah had " a lawgiver from between his feet " during the Persian and Grecian monarchies. Towards the latter part of the Grecian monarchy, the people were governed by kings of their own, of the race of the Maccabees, for near a hundred years ; and after that they were subdued by the Romans. But the Romans suffered them to be governed by their own laws, and to have a king of their own, Herod the Great, who reigned about forty years, and governed with kingly authority, only paying homage to the Romans. But shortly after Christ was born he died, as we have an account, Matt. 2 : 19 ; and Archelaus succeeded him ; but was soon put down by the Roman emperor ; and then the sceptre departed from Judah. There were no more temporal kings of Judah after that, neither had that people their governors from the midst of themselves, but were ruled by a Roman governor sent among them ; and they ceased to have the power of life and death among themselves. Hence the Jews say to Pilate, " It is not lawful for us to put any man to death." John, 18 : 31. Thus the sceptre departed from Judah when Shiloh came.

## CHAPTER II.

## THE PURCHASE OF REDEMPTION.

Having thus considered Christ's coming into the world, and his taking on him our nature, to put himself in a capacity for the purchase of redemption, I come now to show what is intended by the *purchase* of redemption; to make some general *observations* concerning those things by which this purchase was made; and then to consider *those things more particularly which Christ did and suffered*, by which that purchase was made.

I. *The Purchase itself.*

By Christ's purchasing redemption, two things are intended, his *satisfaction*, and his *merit*. All is done by the price that Christ lays down, which does two things: it pays our debt, and so it *satisfies*: by its intrinsic value, and by the agreement between the Father and the Son, it procures our title to happiness, and so it *merits*. The *satisfaction* of Christ is to free us from *misery*, and the *merit* of Christ is to purchase *happiness* for us.

The word *purchase*, in this connection, is taken either more strictly or more largely. It is often used more strictly, to signify only the merit of Christ; and sometimes more largely, to signify both his satisfaction and merit. Indeed most of the words used respecting redemption, have various significations. Thus sometimes divines use *merit* for the whole price that Christ offered, both satisfactorily and positively meritorious. And so the word *satisfaction* is sometimes used, not only for his propitia-

tion, but also for his meritorious obedience. For in some sense, not only suffering the penalty, but positively obeying, is needful to satisfy the law. The reason of this various use of these terms seems to be, that satisfaction and merit do not differ so much really as relatively. They both consist in paying a valuable price, a price of infinite value: but that price, as it respects a debt to be paid, is called *satisfaction*; and as it respects a positive good to be obtained, is called *merit*. The difference between paying a debt and making a positive purchase, is more relative than essential. He who lays down a price to pay a debt, does in some sense make a purchase; he purchases liberty from the obligation. And he who lays down a price to purchase a good, does as it were make satisfaction: he satisfies the conditional demands of him to whom he pays it. This may suffice concerning what is meant by the purchase of Christ.

II. *General Observations concerning those things by which this Purchase was made.*

1. And here observe, that whatever in Christ had the nature of *satisfaction*, was by virtue of his *suffering* or humiliation; but whatever had the nature of *merit*, was by virtue of his *obedience* or righteousness. The satisfaction of Christ consists in his answering the demands of the law on man, which were *consequent* on the breach of the law. These were answered by *suffering* the penalty of the law. The merit of Christ consists in what he did to answer the demands, which were *prior* to man's breach of the law, or to fulfill what the law demanded before man sinned, which was *obedience*.

The satisfaction or propitiation of Christ consists either in his *suffering* evil, or his being subject to *abasement*. Christ did not only make satisfaction by proper suffering, but by whatever had the nature of humiliation and abasement of circumstances. Thus he made satisfaction by continuing under the power of death while he lay buried in the grave; though neither his body nor soul properly endured any suffering after he was dead. Whatever Christ was subject to that was the judicial fruit of sin, had the nature of satisfaction for sin. But not only proper suffering, but all abasement and depression of his state and circumstances below his primitive honor and dignity, such as his body remaining under death, his body and soul remaining separate, &c. are the judicial fruits of sin. And all that Christ did in his state of humiliation, that had the nature of obedience, moral virtue, or goodness, had the nature of merit in it, and was part of the price with which he purchased happiness for the redeemed.

2. Both Christ's satisfaction for sin, and also his meriting happiness by his righteousness, were carried on through the *whole time* of his humiliation. Christ's satisfaction for sin was not by his last sufferings only, though it was principally by them; but all his sufferings, and all his humiliation, from the first moment of his incarnation to his resurrection, were propitiatory or satisfactory. Christ's satisfaction was chiefly by his death, because his sufferings and humiliation in that were greatest. But all his other sufferings, and all his other humiliation, all along had the nature of satisfaction: the mean circumstances in which he was born: his being born of a poor virgin, in a stable, and laid in a

manger ; his taking human nature upon him in its low estate, and under those infirmities brought upon it by the fall ; his being born in the form of sinful flesh, &c. And so all his sufferings in his infancy and childhood, and all that labor, contempt, reproach, temptation, and difficulty of any kind which he suffered through the whole course of his life, was of a propitiatory and satisfactory nature. And so his purchase of happiness by his righteousness was also carried on through the whole time of his humiliation till his resurrection : not only in that obedience he performed through the course of his life, but also in the obedience he performed in laying down his life.

3. It was by the *same things* that Christ both satisfied God's justice, and also purchased eternal happiness. He did not make satisfaction by some things, and then work out righteousness by other different things ; but in the *same acts* by which he wrought out righteousness, he also made satisfaction, only taken in a different relation. One and the same act of Christ, considered with respect to his obedience, was part of his righteousness, and purchased heaven : but considered with respect to the self-denial, and difficulty, and humiliation with which he performed it, had the nature of satisfaction for sin, and procured our pardon. Thus his going about doing good, preaching the Gospel, and teaching his disciples, was a part of his righteousness, and the purchase of heaven, as it was done in obedience to the Father ; and the same was a part of his satisfaction, as he did it with great labor, trouble, and weariness, and under great temptations, exposing himself thereby to reproach and contempt.

So his laying down his life had the nature of satisfaction to God's offended justice, considered as his bearing punishment in our stead : but considered as an act of obedience to God, who had given him this command, that he should lay down his life for sinners, it was a part of his righteousness and purchase, and as much the principal part of his righteousness as it was the principal part of his satisfaction. And to instance in his circumcision, what he suffered in it, had the nature of satisfaction : the blood that was shed therein was propitiatory blood ; but as it was a conformity to the law of Moses, it was part of his meritorious righteousness. Though it was not properly the act of his human nature, he being an infant ; yet the human nature being the subject of it, and being the act of his *person*, it was accepted as an act of his obedience, as our Mediator. And even his being born in such a low condition, has the nature of satisfaction by reason of the humiliation that was in it ; and of righteousness, as it was the act of his *person* in obedience to the Father, what the will of the human nature did acquiesce in, though there was no act of the will of the human nature prior to it.

III. *Those things in particular by which the Purchase was made—Christ's Obedience and Righteousness.*

I now proceed to consider the things that passed during the time of Christ's humiliation, and first, with respect to his *obedience and righteousness*. And this is subject to a threefold distribution. I shall therefore consider his obedience with respect to the *laws* which he obeyed—the *different stages of*



*his life* in which he performed it—and the *virtues he exercised* in his obedience.

I. The first distribution of the acts of Christ's righteousness is with respect to *the laws he obeyed*. But here it must be observed in general, that all the precepts which Christ obeyed may be reduced to one law, which the apostle calls *the law of works*. Rom. 3 : 27. Every command that Christ obeyed may be reduced to that great and everlasting law of God contained in the covenant of works, that eternal rule of right which God had established between himself and mankind. Christ came into the world to fulfill and answer the covenant of works, that is, the covenant that is to stand for ever as a rule of judgment. The covenant that we had broken, was the covenant that must be fulfilled.

This law of works indeed includes all the laws of God that ever have been given to mankind ; for it is a general rule of the law of works, and indeed of the law of nature, that God is to be obeyed, and that he must be submitted to in whatever positive precept he is pleased to give. It is a rule of the law of works, that men should obey their *earthly* parents : and it is certainly as much a rule of the same law, that we should obey our *heavenly* Father ; and so the law of works requires obedience to all the positive commands of God. It required Adam's obedience to that positive command, not to eat of the forbidden fruit ; and it required obedience of the Jews to all the positive commands of their institution. When God commanded Jonah to arise and go to Nineveh, the law of works required him to obey ; and so it required Christ's obedience to all the positive commands which God gave him.

But, more particularly, *the commands of God which Christ obeyed*, were of three kinds; they were such as he was subject to, either merely *as man*, or *as he was a Jew*, or purely *as Mediator*.

1. He obeyed those commands to which he was subject merely *as man*. These were the commands of the moral law, which was the same with that given at Mount Sinai, written in two tables of stone, which are obligatory on mankind of all nations and all ages of the world.

2. He obeyed all those laws to which he was subject *as a Jew*. Thus he was subject to the ceremonial law, and was conformed to it. He was conformed to it in his being circumcised the eighth day; and he strictly obeyed it in going up to Jerusalem to the temple three times a year: at least after he was come to the age of twelve years, which seems to have been the age when the males began to go up to the temple. And so Christ constantly attended the service of the temple, and of the synagogues.

To this head of his obedience may be reduced his submission to John's baptism. For it was a special command to the Jews, to go forth to John the Baptist, and be baptized of him; and therefore, when Christ came to be baptized of John, and John objected that he had more need to come to him to be baptized of him, he gives this reason for it, that it was needful that he should do it, that he might "fulfill all righteousness." Matt. 3: 13-15.

3. Christ was subject to *the mediatorial law*; or that which related purely to his mediatorial office. Such were the commands which the Father gave him to teach such doctrines, to preach the Gospel, to work such miracles, to call such disciples, to

appoint such ordinances, and finally to lay down his life : for he did all these things in obedience to the commands he had received of the Father, as he often tells us. John, 10 : 18 ; 14 : 31. These commands he was not subject to merely as man ; for they did not belong to other men : nor yet was he subject to them as a Jew ; for they were no part of the Mosaic law : but they were commands he had received of the Father, that purely respected his mediatorial office.

Christ's righteousness, by which he merited heaven for himself, and all who believe in him, consists principally in his obedience to this mediatorial law ; for in fulfilling this law consisted his chief work and business in the world. The history of the evangelists is chiefly taken up in giving an account of his obedience to this law. This part of his obedience was attended with the greatest difficulty ; and therefore his obedience in it was most meritorious. What Christ had to do in the world as Mediator, was infinitely more difficult than what he had to do merely as a man or as a Jew. To his obedience to this mediatorial law belongs his going through his last sufferings, beginning with his agony in the garden, and ending with his resurrection.

As the obedience of the first Adam, wherein his righteousness would have consisted, if he had stood, would have mainly consisted in his obedience to that special law to which he was subject as moral head and surety of mankind, even the command of abstaining from the tree of knowledge of good and evil ; so the obedience of the second Adam, wherein his righteousness consists, lies mainly in his obedience to that special law to which he

was subject as Mediator and surety for man.

Before I proceed to the next distribution of Christ's righteousness, I would observe three things concerning his obedience to these laws.

1. His obedience to them was in every respect *perfect*. It was perfect with respect to the *work* commanded, and the *principle* from which he obeyed. It was perfect with respect to the *ends* he acted for; he never had any by-ends, but aimed perfectly at such as the law of God required. It was perfect with respect to the *manner* of performance; every circumstance of each act was perfectly conformed to the command. It was perfect with respect to the *degree* of the performance: he acted wholly up to the rule. It was perfect with respect to the *constancy* of obedience, without any interruption; and with respect to *perseverance*. He held out in perfect obedience to the very end, in all the changes he passed through, and all the trials that were before him.

The meritoriousness of Christ's obedience depends on the perfection of it. If it had failed in any instance, it could not have been meritorious; for imperfect obedience is not accepted as any obedience at all in the sight of the law of works, to which Christ was subject. That is not accepted as obedience to a law which does not fully answer it.

2. Christ's obedience was performed through the greatest trials and temptations. His obedience was attended with the greatest difficulties, and most extreme abasement; which was another thing that rendered it more meritorious and thank-worthy. To obey another when his commands are easy, is not so worthy, as to obey when it cannot be done without great difficulty.

3. He performed this obedience with infinite *respect to God, and the honor of his law*. The obedience he performed was with infinitely greater love to God, and regard to his authority, than that of angels. The angels perform their obedience with perfect love, with a sinless perfection; but Christ performed his with infinite love. Though the human nature of Christ was not capable of love absolutely infinite, yet Christ's obedience in that nature, is the obedience of his person as God-man; and therefore there was infinite love manifest in that obedience. And this, together with the infinite dignity of the person who obeyed, rendered his obedience infinitely meritorious.

II. The second distribution of the acts of Christ's obedience, regards *the different parts of his life*, wherein they were performed. And in this respect they may be divided into those which were performed in his private life, and those which were performed in his public ministry.

1. Those acts he performed during his *private life*. He was perfectly obedient in his childhood. He infinitely differed from other children, who, as soon as they begin to act, begin to sin and rebel. He was subject to his earthly parents, though he was Lord of all. Luke, 2 : 51. And was found about his Father's business even when a child. Luke, 2 : 42. He then began to fulfill the mediatorial law, which the Father had given him. He continued his private life for about thirty years, dwelling at Nazareth, in the house of his reputed father Joseph, where he served God in a private capacity, and in following a mechanical trade, the business of a carpenter.

2. Those acts which he performed during his *public ministry*, which began when he was about thirty years of age, and continued for the last three years and a half of his life. Most of the evangelical history is taken up in giving an account of what passed during that time: indeed all the history of Matthew, except the first two chapters; the whole of Mark and John, and all of Luke, except the two first chapters; excepting also what we find in the evangelist concerning the ministry of John the Baptist. Christ's first appearing in his public ministry, is what is often called his *coming* in Scripture. Thus John speaks of Christ's coming as future, though he had been born long before.

Concerning the public ministry of Christ, I would observe the following things:

1. The *forerunner* of Christ's coming in his public ministry was John the Baptist. He came preaching repentance for the remission of sins, to make way for Christ's coming, agreeably to the prophecies of him. Isa. 40: 3-5, and Matt. 3: 5, 6. It is supposed that John the Baptist began his ministry about three years and a half before Christ; so that John's ministry and Christ's put together, made seven years, which was the last of Daniel's weeks. Dan. 9: 27. "He will confirm the covenant with many for one week." Christ came in the midst of this week of years, as Daniel foretold: "And in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease."

John the Baptist's ministry was designed to awaken and convince men of sin, to prepare them for the coming of Christ, and to comfort them. A very remarkable outpouring of the Spirit of God attended

John's ministry ; and the effect of it was, that "Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan, went out to him, and were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins." John was the greatest of all the prophets who came before Christ. Luke, 7 : 28. 'Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist ;' that is, he had the most honorable office. He was as the morning star, which is the harbinger of the approaching day, and forerunner of the rising sun. The other prophets were stars that gave light in the night ; but those stars went out on the approach of the gospel-day. Now the coming of Christ being very nigh, the morning star comes before him, the brightest of all the stars, as John the Baptist was, in the sense mentioned, the greatest of all the prophets. And when Christ came in his public ministry, the light of that morning star decreased too ; as we see, when the sun rises, it diminishes the light of the morning star. So John the Baptist says of himself, John, 3 : 30, "He must increase, but I must decrease." And soon after Christ began his public ministry, John the Baptist was put to death ; as the morning star is visible a little while after the sun is risen, but soon disappears.

2. Christ's entrance on his public ministry was by his *baptism*, followed with the *temptation* in the wilderness. His baptism was as it were the solemn inauguration by which he entered on his ministry ; and was attended with his being anointed with the Holy Ghost in a solemn and visible manner, the Holy Ghost descending upon him in a visible shape, like a dove, attended with a voice from heaven, saying, "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well

pleased." Matt. 3 : 16, 17. After this he was led by the devil into the wilderness. Satan made a violent attack upon him at his first entrance on his work; and he had a remarkable trial of his obedience; but he got the victory. He who had such success with the first Adam, had none with the second.

3. The *work* in which Christ was employed during his ministry. And here are *three* things chiefly to be noticed, viz. his preaching, his working of miracles, and his calling and appointing disciples and ministers of his kingdom.

(1.) His *preaching* the Gospel. Great part of the work of his public ministry consisted in this; and much of that obedience by which he purchased salvation for us, was in his speaking those things which the Father commanded him. He more clearly and abundantly revealed the mind and will of God than ever it had been. He came from the bosom of the Father, perfectly knew his mind, and was in the best capacity to reveal it.\* As the sun, as soon as it is risen, begins to shine, so Christ, as soon as he came into his public ministry, began to enlighten the world with his doctrine. As the law was given at Mount Sinai, so Christ delivered his evangelical doctrine (full of blessings and not curses) to a multitude on a mountain. Matt. ch. 5-7.

When he preached, he did not teach as the scribes, but as one having authority; so that his hearers were astonished at his doctrine. He did not reveal the mind and will of God in the style of the prophets, as, "Thus saith the Lord;" but in such a style as this, "I say unto you," "Verily verily, I say unto you." He delivered his doctrines



not only as the doctrines of God the Father, but as his own. He gave forth commands, not merely (as the prophets were wont to do) as God's commands, but as his own. "This is *my commandment*." John, 15 : 12. "Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever *I command* you." Ver. 14.

(2.) Another thing that Christ was employed in during the course of his ministry, was *working miracles*. Concerning which we may observe several things :

Their *multitude*. Besides particular instances, we often have an account of multitudes coming at once with diseases, and his healing them.

They were *works of mercy*. In them was displayed not only his infinite power and greatness, but his infinite mercy and goodness. He went about doing good, healing the sick, restoring sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, and the proper use of their limbs to the lame and halt; feeding the hungry, cleansing the leprous, and raising the dead.

They were almost all of them *such as had been spoken of as the peculiar works of God*, in the Old Testament. Such were stilling the sea, Psalm 107 : 29, "He maketh the storm a calm, so that the waves thereof are still;" walking on the sea in a storm, Job, 9 : 8, "Which alone—treadeth upon the waves of the sea;" and casting out devils, Psalm 74 : 14, "Thou brakest the heads of leviathan in pieces." So as to feeding a multitude in a wilderness, Deut. 8 : 16, "Who fed thee in the wilderness with manna;" telling man's thoughts, Amos, 4 : 13, "Lo, he that declareth unto man what is his thought—the Lord, the God of hosts is his name;" and raising the dead, Psalm 68 : 20, "Unto God

the Lord belong the issues from death." So as to opening the eyes of the blind, Psalm 146 : 8, "The Lord openeth the eyes of the blind;" healing the sick, Psalm 103 : 3, "Who healeth all thy diseases;" and lifting up those who are bowed together, Psalm 146 : 8, "The Lord raiseth them that are bowed down."

They were in general such works as were *images of the great work which he came to work on man's heart*; representing that inward, spiritual cleansing, healing, renovation, and resurrection, of which all his redeemed are the subjects.

*He wrought them by his own power, and not as the other prophets did.* They were wont to work all their miracles in the name of the Lord; but Christ wrought in his own name. Moses was forbidden to enter into Canaan, because he seemed by his speech to assume to himself the honor of working only one miracle. Nor did Christ work miracles as the *apostles* did; but by his own authority and will: Thus, saith he, "*I will*; be thou clean." Matt. 8 : 3. And in the same strain he put the question, "Believe ye that *I* am able to do this?" Matt. 9 : 28.

(3.) Another thing that Christ did in the course of his ministry, was to *call his disciples*. He called many disciples, whom he employed as ministers. He sent seventy at one time into his work: but there were twelve whom he set apart as apostles, who were the grand ministers of his kingdom, and as it were the twelve foundations of his church. Rev. 21 : 14. These were the main instruments of setting up his kingdom in the world, and therefore shall sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

4. I would observe how he *finished* his ministry. And this was, in giving his dying *counsels* to his disciples, and all that should be his disciples, which we have recorded particularly in the 14th, 15th, and 16th chapters of John. In instituting a solemn *memorial* of his death, the Lord's supper, wherein we have a representation of his body broken, and of his blood shed. In *offering* up himself as God's high-priest, a *sacrifice* to God, in his last sufferings. This act he did as God's minister, as God's anointed priest; and it was the greatest act of his public ministry, the greatest act of his obedience, by which he purchased heaven for believers. The priests of old used to do many things as God's ministers: but the highest execution of their office was their actually offering sacrifice on the altar. So the greatest thing that Christ did in the execution of his priestly office, and the greatest thing he ever did, and that ever was done, was the offering up of himself a sacrifice to God. Herein he was the antitype of all that had been done by all the priests, in all their sacrifices and offerings, from the beginning of the world.

III. The third distribution of the acts by which Christ purchased redemption, regards *the virtues he exercised and manifested* in them, which were every possible virtue and grace. Indeed, there are some particular virtues that sinful man may have, which were not in Christ; not from any defect of virtue, but because his virtue was perfect, and without defect. Such is the virtue of repentance, brokenness of heart for sin, mortification, and denying of lust. Christ had no sin of his own to repent of, nor any lust to deny. But all virtues which do not presuppose sin, were in him in a higher degree than in any mere

creature. Every virtue in him was perfect. Virtue itself was greater in him than in any other; and it was under greater advantages to shine in him than in any other. Strict virtue shines most when most tried; but never had any virtue such trials as Christ's had.

The virtues that Christ exercised in his work may be divided into three classes: those which more immediately respect *God*, those which respected *himself*, and those which respect *men*.

1. *Those virtues which more immediately respect God.* There appeared in him a holy *fear* and *reverence* towards God the Father. Christ had a greater trial of his virtue in this respect than any other had, from the honorableness of his person. This was the temptation of the angels that fell to cast off their worship of God and reverence of his majesty, that they were beings of such exalted dignity themselves. But Christ was infinitely more worthy and honorable than they; for he was the eternal Son of God, and his person was equal to the person of the Father; and yet, as he had taken on him the office of Mediator, and the nature of man, he was full of reverence towards God. He manifested a wonderful *love* towards God. The angels give great testimony of their love towards God, in their constancy and agility in doing his will; and many saints have given great testimonies of their love to God, by having endured great labors and sufferings; but none ever gave such testimonies of love to God as Christ has given. None ever performed such a labor of love as he, and suffered so much from love to God. He manifested the most wonderful *submission* to the will of God. Never was any one's sub

mission so tried as his. And he manifested the most wonderful spirit of *obedience*.

2. In this work he most wonderfully manifested those *virtues which more immediately respected himself*; as humility, patience, and contempt of the world. Christ, though he was the most excellent and honorable, yet was the most *humble* of all creatures. No angel or man ever equalled him in humility, though he was the highest in dignity and honor. Christ would have been under the greatest temptations to pride, if it had been possible for any thing to have tempted him. The temptation of the angels that fell was the dignity of their nature and the honorableness of their circumstances; but Christ was infinitely more honorable than they. The human nature of Christ was so honored as to be in the same person with the eternal Son of God, who was equal with God; and yet that human nature was not at all lifted up with pride. Nor was the man Christ Jesus at all lifted up with pride, by all those wonderful works he wrought, of healing the sick, curing the blind, lame, and maimed, and raising the dead. And though he knew that God had appointed him to be the King over heaven and earth, angels and men, as he says, Matt. 11 : 27, "All things are delivered unto me of my Father;" though he knew he was such an infinitely honorable person, and—"thought it not robbery to be equal with God;" and though he knew he was the heir of the Father's kingdom: yet, such was his humility, that he did not disdain to be abased and depressed into lower and viler circumstances and sufferings than ever any other elect creature was; so that he became least of all, and lowest of all. The proper

trial and evidence of humility is, stooping or complying, when called to it, with those acts or circumstances which are very low, and contain great abasement. But none ever stooped so low as Christ, if we consider either the infinite height from which, or the great depth to which he stooped. Such was his humility, that though he knew himself to be infinitely worthy of being honored ten thousand times as much as the highest prince on earth, or angel in heaven, yet he did not think it too much when called to it, to be bound as a malefactor, to become the laughing-stock of the vilest of men, to be crowned with thorns, to have a mock robe put upon him, and to be crucified like a slave and malefactor, as one of the meanest and worst of vagabonds and miscreants, and an accursed enemy of God and men, who was not fit to live. And this not for himself, but for some of the meanest and vilest of creatures, even some of those accursed wretches that crucified him. Was not this a wonderful manifestation of humility, when he cheerfully and most freely submitted to this abasement? And how did his *patience* shine forth under all the terrible sufferings which he endured; when he was dumb and opened not his mouth, but went as a lamb to the slaughter! And what *contempt* of the glory of this world was there, when he rather chose this meanness and suffering, than to be invested with the external glories of an earthly prince, as the multitude often solicited him!

3. Christ, in a wonderful manner, exercised those *virtues which more immediately respect other men*. And these may be summed up under two heads: meekness and love.

Christ's *meekness* was his humble calmness of

spirit under the provocations he met. The greatness of provocation lies in two things: the degree of opposition by which the provocation is given; and the degree of the unreasonableness of that opposition, or its being causeless, and without reason, and the great degree of obligation to the contrary. Now, if we consider both these things, no man ever met with such provocations as Christ when he was upon earth. How much he was hated, what abuses he suffered from the vilest of men; how great his sufferings, and how spiteful and contemptuous they were in offering him those abuses! How causeless and unreasonable were these abuses, how undeserving he was of them, yea, how much deserving of the contrary, of love, and honor, and good treatment at their hands. If we consider these things, no man ever met with a thousandth part of the provocation that Christ met with from men; and yet how meek was he under all! how composed and quiet his spirit! how far from being ruffled and in a tumult! When he was reviled, he reviled not again: and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he opened not his mouth. No appearance was there of a revengeful spirit; on the contrary, what a spirit of forgiveness did he exhibit! so that he fervently and effectually prayed for their forgiveness, when they were in their highest act of provocation, nailing him to the cross. Luke, 23 : 34. "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do."

And never did there appear such an instance of *love* to men. Christ's love to men, especially in going through his last sufferings, and offering up his life and soul under those sufferings, which was his greatest act of love, was far beyond all parallel.

'There have been very remarkable manifestations of love in some of the saints, as in the apostle Paul, the apostle John, and others; but the love to men that Christ showed when on earth, as much exceeded the love of all other men, as the ocean exceeds a small stream.

And it is to be observed, that all the virtues which appeared in Christ shone brightest in the close of his life, under the trials he then met. Eminent virtue always shows brightest in the fire. Pure gold shows its purity chiefly in the furnace. It was chiefly under those trials which Christ endured in the close of his life, that his love to God, his honor of God's majesty, his regard to the honor of his law, his spirit of obedience, his humility, contempt of the world, his patience, meekness, and spirit of forgiveness towards men, appeared. Indeed, every thing that Christ did to work out redemption for us appears mainly in the close of his life. Here mainly is his satisfaction for sin, and here chiefly is his merit of eternal life for sinners, and here chiefly appears the brightness of his example, which he has set us for imitation. Thus we have taken a brief view of the things whereby the purchase of redemption was made with respect to his *righteousness* that appeared in them.

#### IV. *Christ's sufferings and Humiliation.*

Among those things in particular by which the purchase was made, we must reckon the *sufferings and humiliation* to which Christ was subject, whence arose the satisfaction he made for sin.

I. He was subject to uncommon humiliation and



suffering in his *infancy*. He was born to the end that he might die; and therefore, as it were, began to die as soon as he was born. His mother not only suffered in bearing him, but when her travail came upon her, it is said, "there was no room in the inn." Luke, 2 : 7. She was forced to betake herself to a stable, where Christ was born. Thus he suffered in his birth, as though he had been meaner and viler than a man. And we may conclude that his mother's circumstances in other respects were proportionably strait and difficult, and that she was destitute of the conveniences necessary for so young an infant which others were wont to have. Besides, he was persecuted in his infancy. They began to seek his life as soon as he was born. Herod, the chief man of the land, was so engaged to kill him, that, in order to it, he killed all the children in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under. And Christ suffered banishment in his infancy, was driven out of his native country into Egypt, and without doubt suffered much by being carried so long a journey, when he was so young, into a strange country.

II. Christ was subject to great humiliation in his *private life* at Nazareth. He there led a servile, obscure life, in a mean, laborious occupation: for he is called not only the *carpenter's son*, but the *carpenter*. Mark, 6 : 3. "Is not this the carpenter, the brother of James and Joses, and Juda, and Simon?" By hard labor he earned his bread, and so suffered that curse which God pronounced on Adam. Gen. 3 : 19. "In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread." Let us consider how great a degree of humiliation the glorious Son of God, the Creator of

heaven and earth, was subject to in this, that for about thirty years he should live a private obscure life among laboring men, and all this while be overlooked and not more regarded than other common laborers. Christ's humiliation, in some respects, was greater in private life than in the time of his public ministry. There were many manifestations of his glory in the word he preached, and the miracles he wrought: but the first thirty years of his life he spent among ordinary men, as it were in silence. There was nothing to distinguish him but the spotless purity and eminent holiness of his life; and that was in a great measure hid in obscurity, so that he was little noticed till after his baptism.

III. Christ was the subject of great humiliation and suffering during his *public life*, from his baptism till the night wherein he was betrayed.

1. He suffered great *poverty*, so that he had not *where to lay his head*. Matt. 8 : 20. John, 18 : 1, 2. Luke, 21 : 37 ; 22 : 39. So that what was spoken of Christ in Cant. 5 : 2, "My head is filled with dew, and my locks with the drops of the night," was literally fulfilled. And through his poverty he doubtless was often tried with hunger, thirst, and cold. Matt. 4 : 2 ; 21 : 18. His mother and natural relations were poor, not able to help him; and he was maintained by the charity of some of his disciples while he lived. So we read, Luke, 8 : 2, 3, of certain women that followed him, and ministered unto him of their substance. He was so poor that he was not able to pay the demanded tribute without a miracle. Matt. 17 : 27. When he ate his last passover, it was not at his own charge, but that of another. Luke, 22 : 7. And from his poverty he

had no grave of his own to be buried in. It was the manner of the Jews, unless they were poor, to prepare themselves a sepulchre while they lived. But Christ had no land of his own, though he was Possessor of heaven and earth; and therefore was buried by Joseph of Arimathea's charity, in his tomb, which he had prepared for himself.

2. He suffered great hatred and *reproach*. He was "despised and rejected of men;" one of little account, slighted for his low parentage, and his mean city Nazareth. He was reproached as a glutton and drunkard, a friend of publicans and sinners; was called a deceiver of the people; sometimes a madman, and a Samaritan, and one possessed with a devil. John, 7:20; 8:48; 10:20. He was called a blasphemer, and accounted by many a wizard, or one that wrought miracles by communication with Beelzebub. They excommunicated him, and agreed to excommunicate any man that should own him. John, 9:22. They wished him dead, and were continually seeking to murder him—sometimes by force and sometimes by craft. They often took up stones to stone him, and once led him to the brow of a hill, intending to throw him down the precipice, to dash him in pieces against the rocks.

He was thus hated and reproached by his own visible people. John, 1:11. "He came to his own, and his own received him not." And he was principally despised and hated by those who were in chief repute, and were their greatest men. Indeed the hatred was general. Into whatever part of the land he went, he met with hatred and contempt; in Capernaum, and Jericho; in Jerusalem, which was the holy city, even when he went to the temple to worship;

also in Nazareth, his own city, among his own relations and his neighbors.

3. He suffered the buffetings of Satan in an uncommon manner. One time in particular he had a long conflict with the devil, when he was in the wilderness forty days with wild beasts and devils; and was so exposed to the devil's power, that he was carried about by him from place to place, while he was otherwise in a very suffering state.

IV. I come now to his *last humiliation and sufferings*, from the evening of the night wherein he was betrayed, to his resurrection. And here was his greatest humiliation and suffering, by which principally he made satisfaction to the justice of God for the sins of men. First, his life was sold by one of his own disciples for thirty pieces of silver; which was the price of the life of a servant. Exod. 21 : 32. Then he was in dreadful agony in the garden. There came such a dismal gloom upon his soul, that he began to be sorrowful and very heavy, and said that his *soul was exceeding sorrowful, even unto death, and was sore amazed*. So violent was the agony of his soul, as to force the blood through the pores of his skin; so that while his soul was overwhelmed with amazing sorrow, his body was covered with blood. The disciples, who used to be as his friends and family, at this time, above all, appeared cold towards him, and unconcerned for him, at the same time that his Father's face was hid from him. Judas, to whom Christ had been so very merciful, and who was treated as one of his family or familiar friends, comes and betrays him in the most deceitful, treacherous manner. The officers and soldiers apprehend and bind him; his disciples for-

sake him and flee ; his own best friends do not stand by him to comfort him in this time of his distress. He is led away as a malefactor to appear before the priests and scribes, his venomous mortal enemies, that they might sit as his judges. Now they had got him into their hands, they sat up all night, to have the pleasure of insulting him. But because they aimed at nothing short of his life, they set themselves to find some color to put him to death, and seek for witnesses against him. When none appeared, they set some to bear false witness ; and when their witness did not agree together, they examined him, in hope to catch something out of his own mouth. They hoped he would say that he was the Son of God, and then they thought they should have enough. But because they see they are not like to obtain this, they adjure him, in the name of God, to say whether he was or not ; and when he confessed that he was, then it was a time of rejoicing with them, which they show by spitting in his face, blindfolding him, striking him in the face with the palms of their hands, and then bidding him prophesy who it was that struck him ; thus ridiculing him for pretending to be a prophet. And the very servants have a hand in the sport. Mark, 14 : 65. "The servants did strike him with the palms of their hands."

During the sufferings of that night, Peter, one of the chief of his own disciples, instead of standing by to comfort, appears ashamed to own him, and denies and renounces him with oaths and curses. And after the chief priests and elders had finished the night in so shamefully abusing him, in the morning (the morning of the most wonderful day that ever

was) they led him away to Pilate, to be condemned to death by him, because they had not the power of life and death in their own hands. He is brought before Pilate's judgment-seat, and there the priests and elders accuse him as a traitor. And when Pilate, upon examining into the matter, declared he found no fault in him, the Jews were but the more fierce and violent to have him condemned. Upon which Pilate, after clearing him, very unjustly brings him to a second trial; and then not finding any thing against him, acquits him again. Pilate treats him as a poor worthless fellow; but is ashamed, on so little pretence, to condemn him as a traitor.

And then he was sent to Herod to be tried by him, and was brought before his judgment-seat; his enemies following and virulently accusing him as a traitor, or one that would be a king. Herod does not condemn him, but looks upon him as Pilate did, as a poor worthless creature, not worthy to be noticed, and makes a mere laugh of the Jews accusing him as dangerous to Cæsar; and therefore, in derision, dresses him in a mock robe, makes sport of him, and sends him back through the streets of Jerusalem to Pilate, with the mock robe on.

Then the Jews prefer Barabbas before him, and are instant and violent with loud vociferations to Pilate, to crucify him. So Pilate, after he had cleared him twice, and Herod once, very unrighteously brings him on trial the third time, to try if he could not find something sufficient to crucify him. Christ was stripped and scourged; thus he gave his "back to the smiters." After that, though Pilate still declared that he found no fault in him, yet, so unjust was he,

that, for fear of the Jews, he delivered Christ to be crucified. But before they execute the sentence, his spiteful and cruel enemies take the pleasure of mocking him again; they get round him, and make a set business of it. They strip him, put on him a scarlet robe, a reed in his hand, and a crown of thorns on his head. Both Jews and Roman soldiers unite in the transaction; they bow the knee before him, and in derision cry, "Hail, king of the Jews." They spit upon him also, take the reed out of his hand, and smite him on the head. After this they led him away to crucify him; made him carry his own cross, till he sunk under it, his strength being spent; and then they laid it on one Simon, a Cyrenian.

At length, being come to Mount Calvary, they execute the sentence which Pilate had so unrighteously pronounced. They nail him to the cross by his hands and feet, then raise it erect, and fix one end in the ground, he being still suspended on it by the nails which pierced his hands and feet. Now Christ's sufferings are come to the extremity: now the cup, which he so earnestly prayed might pass from him, is come; he must, he does drink it. In those days crucifixion was the most tormenting death by which any were executed. There was no death wherein the person expired so much from mere torment; and hence the Roman word, which signifies *torment*, is taken from this kind of death. Besides what our Lord endured in this excruciating death of his body, he endured vastly more in his soul. Now was that "travail of his soul," of which we read in the prophet; now it pleased God to bruise him, and to put him to grief; now he

poured out his soul unto death, as in Isa. 53. And if the mere forethought of this cup made him sweat blood, how much more dreadful and excruciating must the drinking of it have been! Many martyrs have endured much in their bodies, while their souls have been joyful, and have sung for joy, whereby they have been supported under the sufferings of their outward man, and have triumphed over them. But this was not the case with Christ; he had no such support; but his sufferings were chiefly those of the mind, though those of his body were extremely great. In his crucifixion Christ did not sweat blood, as he had done before; not because his agony was now not so great, but his blood had vent another way. But though he did not sweat blood, yet such was the suffering of his soul, that probably it rent his vitals; when his side was pierced, there came forth blood and water. And so here was a kind of literal fulfillment of Psalm 22 : 14. "I am poured out like water:—my heart is like wax, it is melted in the midst of my bowels."

Now, under all these sufferings, the Jews still mock him; and wagging their heads, say, "Thou that destroyest the temple and buildest it in three days, save thyself: if thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross." Even the chief priests, scribes, and elders, joined in the cry, saying, "He saved others, himself he cannot save." And probably the devil at the same time tormented him to the utmost of his power; and hence it is said, Luke, 22 : 53, "This is your hour, and the power of darkness."

Under these sufferings, Christ, having cried out once and again with a loud voice, at last said, IT IS



FINISHED, John, 19 : 30, and "bowed the head and gave up the ghost." And thus was finished the greatest and most wonderful thing that ever was done. Now the angels beheld the most wonderful sight that ever they saw. Now was accomplished the main thing that had been pointed at by the various institutions of the ceremonial law, by all the typical dispensations, and by all the sacrifices from the beginning of the world.

Christ being thus brought under the power of death, continued under it till the morning of the next day but one. Then was finished that great work, the purchase of our redemption, for which such great preparation had been made from the beginning of the world. Then was finished all that was required in order to satisfy the threatenings of the law, and all that was necessary in order to satisfy divine justice ; then the utmost that vindictive justice demanded, even the whole debt, was paid. Then was finished the whole of the purchase of eternal life. And now there is no need of any thing more to be done towards a purchase of salvation for sinners ; nor has ever any thing been done since nor will any thing more be done for ever and ever.

---

## CHAPTER III.

### IMPROVEMENT OF THE SECOND PERIOD.

In surveying the history of redemption, we have now shown how this work was carried on through

the two former of the three main periods into which this whole space of time was divided, viz. from the fall to the incarnation of Christ, and from thence to the end of the time of Christ's humiliation. In the first of these periods we have particularly explained how God prepared the way for Christ's appearing and purchasing redemption; and in the second period how that purchase was made and finished. I would now make some *improvement* of what has been said on both these subjects considered conjointly.

### I. *An Use of Reproof.*

A reproof of unbelief, of self-righteousness, and of a careless neglect of the salvation of Christ.

I. How greatly do these things *reprove those who do not believe in, but reject the Lord Jesus Christ!* all who do not heartily receive him. Persons may receive him in profession outwardly, and may wish that they had some of those benefits that Christ has purchased, and yet their hearts not receive him. They may be hearty in nothing that they do towards Christ; they may have no high esteem of, nor any sincere respect to Christ; they may never have opened the door of their heart to him, but have kept him shut out all their days ever since his salvation has been offered to them. Though their hearts have been opened wide to others, with free admittance at all times, yet Christ has always been shut out, and they have been deaf to all his calls. They never could find an inclination of heart to receive him, nor would they ever trust in him.

Let me now call upon you to consider how great is your sin in thus rejecting Jesus Christ. You

slight the glorious Person for whose coming God made such great preparation in such a series of wonderful providences from the beginning of the world, and whom, after all these things were made ready, God sent into the world, bringing to pass a thing before unknown, the union of the divine nature with the human in one person. You have been guilty of slighting that great Savior, who, after such preparation, actually accomplished the purchase of redemption; and who, after he had spent three, or four and thirty years in poverty, labor, and contempt, in purchasing redemption, at last finished the purchase by closing his life under such extreme sufferings; and so by his death, and continuing for a time under the power of death, completed the whole. This is the Savior you reject and despise. You make light of all the glory of his person, and of all the love of God the Father in sending him into the world, and all his wonderful love appearing in the whole of this work. That precious stone which God has laid in Zion for a foundation in such a manner, and by such wonderful works, is by you set at naught.

Sinners sometimes are ready to wonder why unbelief should be looked upon as a great sin; but if you consider what has been said, how can you wonder? If this Savior is so great, and this work so great, and such great things have been done in order to it, truly there is no cause of wonder that the rejection of this Savior is so provoking to God. It brings greater guilt than the sins of the worst of heathen who never heard of those things, nor have had this Savior offered to them.

II. What has been said, affords matter of reproof

to those who, instead of believing Christ, *trust in themselves for salvation*. Is it not a common thing with men to take it upon themselves to do that great work which Christ came into the world to do? to trust in their prayers, the pains they take in religion, the reformation of their lives, and their self-denial, to recommend them to God, to make some atonement for their past sins? Let such consider three things:

1. How *great* a thing that is which you take upon you. It is to do the work of the great Savior of the world. You trust in your own doings to appease God for your sins, and to incline the heart of God to you. Though you are poor, worthless, vile, and polluted, yet you arrogantly take upon you that very work for which the only-begotten Son of God became man; and in order to which God employed four thousand years in all the great dispensations of his providence, aiming chiefly to make way for Christ's coming to do this work. This is the work that you foolishly think yourself sufficient for; as though your prayers and other performances were excellent enough for this purpose. Consider how vain is the thought which you entertain of yourself. How must such arrogance appear in the sight of Christ, whom it cost so much. It was not to be obtained even by him, so great and glorious a person, at a cheaper rate than his wading through a sea of blood, and passing through the midst of the furnace of God's wrath. And how vain must your arrogance appear in the sight of God, when he sees you imagining yourself sufficient, and your worthless, polluted performances excellent enough for the accomplishing of that work of his own Son, to prepare the way for which he was employed in ordering all

the great affairs of the world for so many ages!

2. If there be ground for you to trust, as you do, in your own righteousness, then all that Christ did to purchase salvation, and all that God did from the fall of man to prepare the way for it, is *in vain*. Your self-righteousness charges God with the greatest folly, as though he has done all things in vain, to bring about an accomplishment of what you alone, with your poor polluted prayers, and the little pains you take in religion, are sufficient to accomplish for yourself. For if you can appease God's anger, and commend yourself to him by these means, then you have no need of Christ. Gal. 2: 21. "If righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain."

If you can do this by your prayers and good works, Christ might have spared his pains; he might have spared his blood; he might have kept within the bosom of his Father, without coming down to this evil world, to be despised, reproached, and persecuted to death. God needed not to have been, for four thousand years, causing so many changes in the state of the world, to bring about what you can accomplish in a few days, only with the trouble of a few religious performances. Consider what greater folly could you have devised to charge upon God than this, that all those things were done so needlessly; when, instead of all this, he might only have called you forth, and committed the business to you which you think you can do so easily. Alas! how blind are natural men! and especially how vain are the thoughts they have of themselves! How ignorant of their own littleness and pollution! What great things do they assume to themselves!

3. You that trust to your own righteousness, ar-

rogate to yourselves the honor of the *greatest* thing that ever God himself did. You seem not only sufficient to perform *divine* works, but such is your pride and vanity, that you are not content without taking upon you to do the very *greatest* work that ever God himself wrought. You see, by what has been said, how God has subordinated all his other works to this of redemption. God's works of providence are greater than those of creation; and all his works of providence, from the beginning of the generations of men, were in order to make way for the purchasing of redemption. To take on yourself to work out redemption, is a greater thing than if you had taken it upon you to create a world. What a figure you would make, if you should seriously attempt to create a world; or, decking yourself with majesty, should pretend to speak the word of power, and call a universe out of nothing, intending to go on in order, and say, "Let there be light; let there be a firmament," &c. But then consider, that in attempting to work out redemption for yourself, you attempt a *greater* thing than this, and are *serious* in it, and will not be dissuaded from it. You strive in it, are full of the thought that you are sufficient for it, and big with hopes of accomplishing it.

You take upon you to do the very greatest and *most difficult* part of this work, to purchase redemption. Christ could accomplish other parts of this work without cost; but this part cost him his life, as well as innumerable pains and labors. Yet this is that part which self-righteous persons go about to accomplish for themselves. If all the angels in heaven had been sufficient for this work, would God have set himself to effect such things as he did in or-

der to it? and would he ever have sent his own Son, the Creator of angels, into the world, to have done and suffered such things?

What self-righteous persons take to themselves, is the same work that Christ was engaged in when he was in his agony and bloody sweat, and when he died on the cross, which was the greatest thing that ever the eyes of angels beheld. Great as it is, they imagine they can do the same that Christ accomplished by it. Their self-righteousness does in effect charge Christ's offering up himself in these sufferings as the greatest instance of folly that ever men or angels saw, instead of being the most glorious display of the divine wisdom and grace. Yea, self-righteousness makes all that Christ did through the whole course of his life, all that he said and suffered, and his incarnation itself, and not only so, but all that God had been doing in the great dispensations of his providence from the beginning of the world to that time, as nothing but a scene of the most wild, extreme, and transcendent folly.

Is it any wonder, then, that a self-righteous spirit is so represented in Scripture, and spoken of, as that which is most fatal to the souls of men? And is it any wonder that Christ is represented in Scripture as being so provoked with the Pharisees and others, who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and were proud of their goodness, and thought that their own performances were a valuable price of God's favor and love?

Let persons hence be warned against a self-righteous spirit. You that are seeking salvation, and taking pains in religion, take heed that you do not trust in what you do. Harbor no such thoughts,

that God now, seeing how much you are reformed, how you are sometimes affected, will be pacified towards you, and will not be so angry for your former sins; that you shall gain on him by such things, and draw his heart to show you mercy; or at least that God ought to accept of what you do, so as to be inclined by it in some measure to forgive you, and have mercy on you. If you entertain the thought that God is *obliged* to do it, and does not act justly if he refuse to regard your prayers and pains; if you quarrel with God, and complain of him for not doing it, this shows what your opinion is of your own righteousness—that it is a valuable price of salvation, and ought to be accepted of God as such. Such complaining of God, and quarreling with him, for not taking more notice of your righteousness, plainly shows that you are guilty of the arrogance of thinking yourself sufficient to offer the price of your own salvation.

III. What has been said on this subject, affords matter of reproof to those who carelessly *neglect* the salvation of Christ. These live a senseless kind of life, neglect the business of religion and their own souls, not taking any course to get an interest in Christ, or what he has done and suffered, or any part in that glorious salvation he has purchased. They have their minds taken up about the gains of the world, or the vanities and pleasures of youth, make light of what they hear of Christ's salvation, and at present do not so much as seek after it. Let me here apply myself to you in some expository interrogations.

1. Shall so many *prophets, and kings, and righteous men*, have had their minds so much taken up



with the prospect that the purchase of salvation was to be wrought out in ages long after their death ; and will you neglect it when actually accomplished ? You have heard what great account the church in all ages made of the future redemption of Christ ; how joyfully they expected it, how they spoke of it, how they studied and searched into these things, how they sung joyful songs, and had their hearts greatly engaged about it, though they did not expect that it would be accomplished till many ages after their death. 1 Pet. 1 : 10-12. How much did Isaiah and Daniel, and other prophets, speak concerning this redemption ! and how much were their hearts engaged, and their attention and study fixed upon it ! How was David's mind absorbed in this subject ! he declared that it was all his salvation, and all his desire. 2 Sam. 23 : 5. How did he employ his voice and harp in celebrating it, and the glorious display of divine grace therein exhibited !—and all this, though they beheld it not as yet accomplished, but saw that it was to be brought to pass so long a time after their day. And before this, how did Abraham and the other patriarchs rejoice in the prospect of Christ's day, and the redemption which he was to purchase ! And even the saints before the flood were affected and elated in the expectation of this glorious event, though it was then so long future, and was so faintly and obscurely revealed to them.

Now these things are declared to you as actually fulfilled. The church now has seen accomplished all those great things of which they so joyfully prophesied ; and you are abundantly shown how those things were accomplished. Matt. 13 : 17.

“ Verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen ; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.” And yet, when these things are thus abundantly set before you as already accomplished, how light do you make of them ! How unconcerned are you about them, following other things, and not so much as feeling any interest in them ! Indeed your sin is extremely aggravated in the sight of God. God has put you under great advantages for your eternal salvation, far greater than those saints of old enjoyed. He has put you under a more glorious dispensation ; has given you a more clear revelation of Christ and his salvation ; and yet you neglect all these advantages, and go on in a careless course of life, as though nothing had been done, no such proposals and offers had been made you.

2. Have the *angels* been so engaged about this salvation by Christ ever since the fall of man, though they are not immediately concerned in it, and will you, who need it, and have it offered to you, be so careless about it ? You have heard how the angels at first were subjected to Christ as Mediator, and how they have all along been ministering spirits to him in this work. In all the great dispensations of which you have heard from the beginning of the world, they have been active and as a flame of fire, being most diligently employed as ministering spirits to minister to Christ in this great work of man’s redemption. And when Christ came, how engaged were their minds ! They came to Zacharias, to inform him of the coming of Christ’s forerunner. They came to the Virgin Mary, to inform her of

the approaching birth of Christ. They came to Joseph, to warn him of the danger which threatened the new-born Savior, and to point out to him the means of safety. And how were their minds engaged at the time of the birth of Christ! The whole multitude of the heavenly hosts sang praises, saying, "Glory to God in the highest, on earth peace, good will towards men." And afterwards, from time to time, they ministered to Christ when on earth; at the time of his temptation, of his agony in the garden, at his resurrection, and at his ascension. All these things show that they were greatly engaged in this work; and the Scripture informs us that they pry into these things. 1 Pet. 1 : 12. "Which things the angels desire to look into." And how are they represented in the Revelation as being employed in heaven in singing praises to Him that sitteth on the throne, and to the Lamb! Now, shall these take so much notice of this redemption, and of the Purchaser, who need it not for themselves, and have no immediate concern or interest in it, or offer of it; and will you to whom it is offered, and who are in such extreme necessity, neglect and take no notice of it?

3. Did *Christ* labor so hard, and suffer so much to procure this salvation, and is it not worth the while for you to be at some labor in seeking it? Did our salvation lie with such weight on the mind of Christ, as to induce him to become man, to suffer even death itself, in order to procure it? And is it not worth the while for you, who need this salvation, and must perish eternally without it, to take earnest pains to obtain an interest in it after it is procured, and all things are ready?

4. Shall *the great God* be so concerned about this salvation, as often to overturn the world to make way for it; and when all is done, is it not worth your seeking? What great, what wonderful things has he done: removing and setting up kings, raising up a great number of prophets, separating a distinct people from the rest of the world, overturning nations and kingdoms, and often the state of the world; and so has continued bringing about one change and revolution after another for forty centuries in succession, to make way for the procuring of this salvation! And when at the close of these ages the great Savior comes, passing through a long series of reproach and suffering, and then enduring all the waves and billows of God's wrath for men's sins, inasmuch that they overwhelmed his soul: after all these things done to procure salvation for sinners, is it not worthy of your being so much concerned about it, that it should not be thrown by, and made nothing of, in comparison of worldly gain, gay clothing, or youthful diversions, and other such trifling things?

O! that you who live negligent of this salvation, would consider what you do! What has been said on this subject, may show you what reason there is in that exclamation of the apostle, Heb. 2: 3, "How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation?" and Acts, 13: 41, "Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish; for I work a work in your days, a work which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you." God looks on you as great enemies of the cross of Christ, as adversaries and despisers of all the glory of this great work. And if God has made such account of the glory of salvation as to destroy many nations to prepare the way

for the glory of his Son in this work ; how little account will he make of the lives and souls of ten thousand of such opposers and despisers as you, who continue impenitent, when your welfare stands in the way of that glory ? Surely you shall be dashed to pieces as a potter's vessel, and trodden down as the mire of the streets. God may, through wonderful patience, bear with hardened careless sinners for a while ; but he will not long bear with such despisers of his dear Son and his great salvation, the glory of which he has had so much at heart, before he will utterly consume them without remedy or mercy.

## II. *An Use of Encouragement.*

I will conclude with a second use of encouragement to burdened souls to put their trust in Christ for salvation. To all such as are not careless and negligent, but make seeking an interest in Christ their main business, being sensible in some measure of their necessity, and afraid of the wrath to come : to such, what has been said on this subject holds forth great encouragement to venture their souls on the Lord Jesus Christ. And as motives proper to excite you so to do, let me lead you to consider two things in particular.

1. The *completeness* of the purchase which has been made. You have seen that this work of purchasing salvation was wholly finished during the time of Christ's humiliation. When Christ rose from the dead, and was exalted from that abasement to which he submitted for our salvation, the purchase of eternal life was completed, so that there was no need of any thing more to be done in order

to it. But now the servants were sent forth with the message, Matt. 22 : 4, "Behold, I have prepared my dinner : my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready : come unto the marriage." Therefore, are your sins many and great ? Here is enough done by Christ to procure their pardon. There is no need of any righteousness of yours to obtain your pardon and justification ; no, you may come freely, without money and without price. Since therefore there is such a free and gracious invitation given you, come, come naked as you are ; come as a poor condemned criminal ; come and cast yourself down at Christ's feet, as one justly condemned, and utterly helpless. Here is a complete salvation wrought out by Christ, and through him offered to you. Come, therefore, accept of it, and be saved.

2. For Christ to reject one who thus comes to him, would be to frustrate all those great things which God brought to pass from the fall of man to the incarnation of Christ. It would also frustrate all that Christ did and suffered while on earth ; yea, it would frustrate the incarnation itself. All the great things done were for this end, that those might be saved who should come to Christ. Therefore you may be sure Christ will not be backward in saving those who come to him, and trust in him ; for he has no desire to frustrate himself in his own work. Neither will God the Father refuse you ; for he has no desire to frustrate himself in all that he did for so many hundreds and thousands of years, to prepare the way for the salvation of sinners by Christ. Come, therefore, hearken to the sweet and earnest calls of Christ to your soul. Do as he in-

vites and as he commands you. Matt. 11 : 28-30. "Come unto me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me ; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."

---

### PERIOD III.

#### FROM CHRIST'S RESURRECTION TO THE END OF THE WORLD.

We have already shown how the work of redemption was carried on through the *two first* of the **THREE PERIODS** into which we divided the whole space of time from the fall to the end of the world. We are now come to the third and last period, beginning with Christ's resurrection ; and would show, *that the space of time from the end of Christ's humiliation to the end of the world is all taken up in bringing about the great effect or success of Christ's purchase.*

#### INTRODUCTION TO PERIOD THIRD.

Not but that there were great effects and glorious success of Christ's purchase of redemption before, even from the beginning of the generations of men. But all that success was only preparatory, by way of anticipation, as some few fruits are gathered be-

fore the harvest. There was no more success before Christ came, than God saw needful to prepare the way for his coming. The proper time of the success or effect of Christ's redemption is after the purchase has been made, as the proper time for the world to enjoy the light of the sun is the day-time, after the sun is risen, though we may have some small matter of it reflected from the moon and planets before. And even the success of Christ's redemption while he himself was on earth, was very small in comparison of what it was afterwards.

But, Christ having finished that greatest and most difficult of all works, now is come the time for obtaining the end, the glorious effect of it. Having gone through the whole course of his sufferings and humiliation, he is to suffer no more. But now is the time for him to obtain the joy that was set before him. Having made "his soul an offering for sin," now is the time for him to "see his seed," to have "a portion with the great," and to "divide the spoil with the strong."

One design of Christ in what he did in his humiliation, was to lay a foundation for the overthrow of Satan's kingdom; and now is come the time to effect it, as Christ, a little before his crucifixion, said, John, 12 : 31, "Now is the judgment of this world; now shall the prince of this world be cast out." Another design was to gather together in one all things in Christ. Now is come the time for this also. John, 12 : 32. "And I, if I be lifted up, will draw all men unto me;" which is agreeable to Jacob's prophecy of Christ, that "when Shiloh should come, to him should the gathering of the people be." Gen. 49 : 10. Another design is the salvation



of his people. Now when his sufferings are finished, and his humiliation perfected, the time is come for that also. Heb. 5 : 8, 9. " Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered : and being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him." Another design was, to accomplish by these things great glory to the persons of the Trinity. John, 17 : 1. " Father, the hour is come ; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee." Another design was the glory of the saints. John 17 : 2. " As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him." And all the dispensations of God's providence henceforward, even to the final consummation of all things, are to give Christ his reward, and fulfill his end in what he did and suffered upon earth, and the joy that was set before him.

### I. *Scriptural Representations of this Period.*

Before I enter on the consideration of any particular things accomplished in this period, I would briefly observe how the times of this period are represented in Scripture.

I. The times of this period, for the most part, are in the Old Testament called *the latter days*. We often, in the prophets of the Old Testament, read of things that should come to pass *in the latter days*, and sometimes *in the last days*, evidently referring to gospel times. They are called *the latter days*, and *the last days*, because this is the last period of the series of God's providences on earth, the last period of the great work of redemption ; which is, as

it were, the sum of God's works of providence ; the last dispensation of the covenant of grace on earth.

II. The whole time of this period is sometimes in Scripture called *the end of the world*. 1 Cor. 10 : 11. " Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples : and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come." And the apostle, Heb. 9 : 26, in this expression *the end of the world*, means the whole of the gospel-day, from the birth of Christ to the day of judgment : " But now once in the end of the world hath he appeared, to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself." This space of time may well be called *the end of the world* ; for this whole time is taken up in bringing things to their great end and issue. Before, things were in a kind of preparatory state ; but now they are in a finishing state. An end is now brought to the former carnal state of things, which by degrees vanishes, and a spiritual state begins to be established more and more. Particularly, an end is brought to the former state of the *church*, which may be called its worldly state, in which it was subject to carnal ordinances and the rudiments of the world. Then an end is brought to the Jewish *commonwealth*, in the destruction of their city and country. After that, an end is brought to the old *Heathen empire* in Constantine's time. The next step is the finishing of *Satan's visible kingdom* in the world, upon the fall of Antichrist, and the calling of the Jews. And last will come the destruction of the outward frame of the world itself, at the conclusion of the day of judgment. Heaven and earth began to *shake*, in order to a dissolution, according to the prophecy of Haggai, before Christ came, that so only

"those things which cannot be shaken" may remain, Heb. 12 : 27 ; that is, that those things which are to come to an end may terminate, and that only those things may remain which are to remain eternally.

In the first place, the carnal ordinances of the Jewish worship came to an end, *to make way for* the establishment of that spiritual worship which is to endure to all eternity. John, 4 : 21. "Jesus saith unto the woman, Believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father." Verse 23. "But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth : for the Father seeketh such to worship him." This is one instance of the temporary world coming to an end, and the eternal world beginning. And then the outward temple and the city of Jerusalem came to an end, *to give place* to the setting up of the spiritual temple and city, which are to last for ever. Another instance of removing those things which are ready to vanish away, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain, is the bringing to an end the old Heathen empire, to make way for the empire of Christ, which shall last to all eternity. After that, upon the fall of Antichrist, an end will be put to Satan's visible kingdom on earth, to establish Christ's kingdom, which is an eternal kingdom. Dan. 7 : 27. "And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him ;" which is another instance of the ending of

the temporary world, and the beginning of the eternal one. And then, lastly, the very frame of this corruptible world shall come to an end, to make way for the church to dwell in another dwelling place, which shall last to eternity.

Because the world is thus coming to an end by various steps and degrees, the apostle perhaps uses this expression, that not the *end* but the *ends* of the world are come on us; as though the world has several endings one after another. The gospel dispensation is a finishing state; it is all spent in finishing things which before had been preparing, or abolishing things which before had stood. It is all spent, as it were, in summing things up, and bringing them to their issues, and their proper fulfillment. Now all the old types are fulfilled, and the predictions of all the prophets from the beginning of the world shall be accomplished in this period.

III. That state of things which is attained in the events of this period is called *a new heaven and a new earth*. Isa. 65 : 17, 18. "For behold, I create new heavens, and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. And chap. 66 : 22. "For as the new heavens and the new earth which I will make, shall remain before me; so shall your seed and your name remain." See also chap 51 : 16. As the former state of things, or the old world, by one step after another, is through this period coming to an end; so the new state of things, or the new world, which is a spiritual world, *is beginning* and setting up. In consequence of each of these finishings of

the old state of things, there is the beginning of a new and eternal state. So that which accompanied the destruction of the literal Jerusalem, was an establishing of the spiritual. So with respect to the destruction of the old Heathen empire, and all the other endings of the old state of things; till at length the very outward frame of the world itself shall come to an end; and the church shall dwell in heaven, which will be a new habitation. Then shall the utmost be accomplished that is meant by the new heavens and the new earth. See Rev. 21 : 1.

The end of God's creating the world, was to prepare a kingdom for his Son, (for he is appointed heir of the world,) which should remain to all eternity. So far as the *kingdom of Christ is set up* in the world, *so far* is the world brought to its end, and the eternal state of things set up—*so far* are all the great changes and revolutions in the world brought to their everlasting issue, and all things come to their ultimate period—*so far* are the waters of the long channel of divine Providence, which has so many branches, and so many windings, emptied into their proper ocean, which they have been seeking from the beginning of their course, and so are come to their rest. So far as Christ's kingdom is established in the world, *so far* are things wound up and settled in their everlasting state, and a period put to the course of things in this changeable world; *so far* are the first heavens and the first earth come to an end, and the new heavens and the new earth, the everlasting heavens and earth, established in their room.—This leads me to observe,

IV. That the state of things which is attained by

the events of this period, is what is so often called *the kingdom of heaven*, or *the kingdom of God*. We very often read in the New Testament of the kingdom of heaven. John the Baptist preached that the kingdom of heaven was at hand; and so did Christ and his disciples after him; referring to something that the Jews in those days expected and called by that name. They seem to have taken their expectation and the name chiefly from the prophecy of Daniel in Nebuchadnezzar's dream. Dan. 2 : 44. "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom." See also chap. 7 : 13, 14.

Now this *kingdom of heaven* is that evangelical state of things in the church, and in the world, wherein consists the success of Christ's redemption in this period. There had been often great kingdoms set up before; as the Babylonish, the Persian, the Grecian, and the Roman monarchies. But Christ came to set up the last, which is not an earthly kingdom, but a heavenly. John, 18 : 36. "My kingdom is not of this world." This is the kingdom of which Christ speaks, Luke, 22 : 29, "My Father hath appointed to me a kingdom." This kingdom began soon after Christ's resurrection, and is accomplished in *various steps* from that time to the end of the world. Sometimes by *the kingdom of heaven*, is meant not only that *spiritual* state of the church which began soon after Christ's resurrection; but also that *more perfect* state which shall obtain after the downfall of Antichrist; and sometimes that *glorious* and blessed state to which the church shall be received at the day of judgment. So 1 Cor. 15 : 50. "This I say, that flesh

and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God.”—Under this head I would observe several things particularly, for the clearer understanding of what the Scriptures say concerning this period.

1. The setting up of the kingdom of Christ is chiefly accomplished by four successive great events, each of which is in Scripture called *Christ's coming in his kingdom*. The *first* is Christ's appearing in those wonderful dispensations of providence in the apostle's days, in setting up his kingdom and destroying its enemies, which ended in the destruction of Jerusalem. This is called Christ's coming in his kingdom. Matt. 16 : 28. “Verily I say unto you, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.” And Matt. 24. The *second* was accomplished in Constantine's time, in the destruction of the Heathen Roman empire. This is represented as Christ's coming, and is compared to his coming to judgment. Rev. 6 : 13–17. The *third* is to be accomplished at the destruction of Antichrist, which is represented as Christ's coming in his kingdom. Dan. 7 : &c. The *fourth* is his coming to the last judgment, which is the event principally signified in Scripture by *Christ's coming in his kingdom*.

2. Each of the three former of these is a lively image, or type, of the fourth and last—Christ's coming to the final judgment ; as the principal dispensations of providence before, were types of his first coming. As Christ's last coming to judgment is accompanied with the resurrection of the dead, so is each of the three foregoing with a spiritual resurrection. That coming of Christ which ended in the

destruction of Jerusalem, was preceded by a glorious *spiritual* resurrection of souls in the calling of the Gentiles through the preaching of the Gospel. Christ's coming in Constantine's time, was accompanied with a glorious *spiritual* resurrection of the greater part of the known world, in a restoration of it to a visible church state, from a state of Heathenism. Christ's coming at the destruction of Antichrist, will be attended with a *spiritual* resurrection of the church after it shall have been long as it were dead, in the times of Antichrist. This is called the *first resurrection*. Rev. 20 : 5.

Again, as Christ in the last judgment will gloriously manifest himself, coming in the glory of his Father, so in each of the three foregoing events Christ gloriously manifests himself in sending judgments upon his enemies and in showing favor to his church. As the last coming of Christ will be attended with a literal gathering together of the elect from the four winds of heaven, so were each of the preceding attended with a spiritual ingathering. As this gathering together of the elect will be effected by God's angels with a great sound of a trumpet; Matt. 24 : 31; so were each of the preceding spiritual ingatherings effected by the trumpet of the Gospel, sounded by the ministers of Christ. As there shall precede the last appearance of Christ, a time of great degeneracy and wickedness, so this has been, or will be, the case with each of the other appearances. Before each of them is a time of great opposition to the church: before the first, by the Jews; before the second, in Constantine's time, by the Heathen; before the third, by Antichrist; and



before the last, by Gog and Magog, as described in the Revelation.

By each of these comings of Christ, God works a glorious *deliverance* for his church. The *first*, which ended in the destruction of Jerusalem, was attended with bringing the church into the glorious state of the Gospel. The *second*, in Constantine's time, was accompanied with an advancement of the church into a state of liberty from persecution, the countenance of civil authority, and her triumph over Heathen persecutors. The *third*, which shall be at the downfall of Antichrist, will be accompanied with an advancement of the church into that state of the glorious prevalence of truth, liberty, peace, and joy, of which we so often read in the prophetical parts of Scripture. The *last* will be attended with the advancement of the church to consummate glory in heaven.

Each of these comings of Christ is accompanied with a terrible *destruction* of the wicked, and the enemies of the church: the *first*, with the destruction of the persecuting Jews, which was amazingly terrible; the *second*, with dreadful judgments on the Heathen persecutors of the church; the *third*, with the awful destruction of Antichrist, the most cruel and bitter enemy that ever the church had; the *fourth*, with divine wrath and vengeance on all the ungodly. Further, there is in *each* of these comings of Christ an ending of the old, and a beginning of new heavens and a new earth; or an end of a temporal, and a beginning of an eternal state.

3. I would observe, that each of those four great dispensations which are represented as Christ's coming in his kingdom, are but so many steps and

degrees of the accomplishment of that one event predicted. Dan. 7 : 13, 14. "And I saw in the night visions, and behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed." 'This is what the Jews expected, and called "the coming of the kingdom of heaven;" and what John the Baptist and Christ had respect to, when they said, "The kingdom of heaven is at hand." 'This great event is accomplished by several steps.

4. When Christ came with the preaching of the apostles to set up his kingdom in the world, which dispensation ended with the destruction of Jerusalem, then it was accomplished in a *glorious* degree; when the Heathen empire was destroyed in Constantine's time, it was fulfilled in a *further* degree; when Antichrist shall be destroyed, it will be accomplished in a *yet higher* degree: but when the end of the world is come, then will it be accomplished in its *most perfect* degree of all. And because these four great events are but images one of another, and the three former but types of the last, and since they are all only several steps of the accomplishment of the same thing; hence we find them all from time to time prophesied of under one, as in the prophecies of Daniel, and in the 24th chapter of Matthew, where some things seem more applicable to one of them, and others to another.

Thus it appears, that as there are several steps of

the accomplishment of the kingdom of Christ, so in each one of them the event is accomplished in a *further degree* than in the foregoing. That in the time of Constantine was a greater and further accomplishment of the kingdom of Christ, than that which ended in the destruction of Jerusalem; that which shall be at the fall of Antichrist, will be a further accomplishment of the same thing, than that which took place in the time of Constantine; and so on with regard to each: so that the kingdom of Christ is gradually prevailing and growing by these several great steps of its fulfillment, from the time of Christ's resurrection to the end of the world.

5. The great *providences of God between these four events*, are to make way for the kingdom and glory of Christ in the great event following. Those dispensations of providence towards the church and the world, before the destruction of the Heathen empire in the time of Constantine, seem all to have been to make way for the glory of Christ, and the happiness of the church in that event. And so the great providences after that, till the destruction of Antichrist, and the beginning of the glorious times of the church which follow, seem all to be to prepare the way for the greater glory of Christ and his church in that event; and the following ones to the end of the world, seem to be for the greater manifestation of Christ's glory at the consummation of all things. Thus I thought it needful to observe these things in general concerning this last period, before I take notice of *particular* providences by which the work of redemption is carried on through this period, in their order.

Before I proceed, I will briefly answer an In-  
Redemption

QUIRY, *viz.* Why the setting up of Christ's kingdom after his humiliation, should be *so gradual*, since God could easily have finished it at once?—Though it would be presumption in us to pretend to declare all the ends of God in this, yet doubtless much of his wisdom may be seen in it; and particularly in these two things.

1. In this way the glory of God's wisdom is *more visible* to the observation of creatures. If it had been done at once, or in a very short time, there would not have been such opportunities to perceive and observe the particular steps of divine wisdom, as when the work is gradually accomplished, and one effect of his wisdom is held forth to observation after another. It is wisely determined of God, to accomplish his great design by a wonderful and long series of events, that the glory of his wisdom may be displayed in the whole series, and seen in particular successive manifestations. If all that glory which appears in these events had been manifested at once, it would have been too much for us; it would have overpowered our sight and capacities.

2. *Satan is more gloriously triumphed over.* God could easily, by an act of almighty power, at once have crushed Satan. But by giving him time to use his utmost subtilty to hinder the success of what Christ had done and suffered, he is not defeated merely by surprise, but has large opportunity to ply his utmost power and subtilty again and again, to strengthen his own interest all that he can by the work of many ages. Thus God destroys and confounds him, and sets up Christ's kingdom time after time, in spite of all his subtle machinations and great works, and by every step advances it still higher and

higher, till at length it is fully set up, and Satan perfectly and eternally vanquished.—I now proceed to notice the particular events, whereby, from the end of Christ's humiliation to the end of the world, the success of Christ's purchase has been or shall be accomplished.

## II. *How Christ was capacitated for accomplishing the end of his Purchase.*

As the incarnation of Christ was necessary in order to his being in a capacity for the *purchase* of redemption; so his *resurrection* and *ascension* were requisite in order to the *success* of his purchase.

I. His *resurrection*. It was necessary in order to Christ's obtaining the end and effect of his purchase of redemption, that he should rise from the dead. For God the Father had committed the whole work of redemption to his Son, that he should not only purchase it as priest, but actually bring it about as king; and that he should do this as God-man. God the Father would have nothing to do with fallen man in a way of mercy but by a mediator. But in order that Christ might accomplish the success of his own purchase as God-man, it was necessary that he should rise from the dead. Therefore Christ, after he had finished this purchase by death, rises from the dead, to fulfill the end of his purchase. This matter God the Father had committed unto him, that he might, as Lord of all, manage all to his own purposes. Rom. 14: 9. "For to this end Christ both died and rose, and revived; that he might be Lord both of the dead and of the living."

Indeed Christ's resurrection (and so his ascen-

sion) was part of the success of what Christ did and suffered in his humiliation. For though Christ did not properly purchase *redemption* for himself, yet he purchased *eternal life* and glory for himself, as a reward of what he did and suffered. Phil. 2 : 8, 9. "He humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him." And it may be looked upon as part of the success of Christ's purchase, since he did not rise as a *private* person, but as the *head* of his church ; so that they did, as it were, all rise with him. Christ was justified in his resurrection : God acquitted and discharged him hereby, as having done and suffered enough for the sins of all his people. Rom. 4 : 25. "Who was delivered for our offences, and raised again for our justification." And God put him in possession of eternal life, as the head of the church, as a sure earnest that they should follow. For when Christ rose from the dead, that was the beginning of eternal life in him. His life before his death was a mortal life, a temporal life ; but after his resurrection it was an eternal life. Rom. 6 : 9. "Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more ; death hath no more dominion over him." Rev. 1 : 18. "I am he that liveth, and was dead ; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen." But he was put in possession of this eternal life, as the head of the body ; so that the whole church, as it were, rises in him. And now he, who lately suffered so much, is to suffer no more for ever, but has entered into eternal glory.

The resurrection of Christ is the most *joyful* of all events ; because hereby Christ rested from the

great and difficult work of purchasing redemption, and received God's testimony that it was finished. The death of Christ was the greatest and most wonderful of events, but has in it a great deal that is sorrowful. But by the resurrection of Christ, that sorrow is turned into joy. The Head of the church, in that great event, enters on the possession of eternal life; and the whole church is, as it were, "begotten again to a lively hope." 1 Pet. 1:3. Weeping had continued for a night, but now joy cometh in the morning. This is the day of his reigning as the head of the church, and all the church reigns with him. This day was worthy to be commemorated with the greatest joy. Psal. 118:24. "This is the day which the Lord hath made, we will rejoice and be glad in it." And therefore this, above all other days, is appointed to the end of the world, to be weekly sanctified as a day of holy rest and joy, that the church therein may rest and rejoice with her head. And as the third chapter of Genesis is the most sorrowful chapter in the Bible, so those chapters in the evangelists that give an account of the resurrection of Christ, may be looked upon as the most joyful. These give an account of the finishing of the purchase of redemption, and the beginning of the glory of the Head of the church, as the greatest seal and earnest of the eternal glory of all the members.

It is further to be observed, that the day of the Gospel most properly begins with the resurrection of Christ. Till Christ rose from the dead, the Old Testament dispensation remained: but now it ceases, all being fulfilled that was shadowed forth in the typical ordinances of that dispensation. Here most

properly is the end of the Old Testament night; and Christ's rising from the grave with joy and glory, was like the sun rising after a long night of darkness, appearing in joyful light to enlighten the world. Now that joyful dispensation begins, that glorious dispensation of which the prophets testified so much. Now the gospel-sun is risen in glory, and "with healing in his wings," that those who fear God's name may "go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall."

II. Christ's *ascension* into heaven. In this I would include his sitting at the right hand of God. For Christ's ascension was nothing else but ascending to God's right hand in glory. A deliverer of a people as their king, in order that he may be under the best capacity for it, is first installed in his throne. We are told that Christ was exalted for this end, that he might accomplish the success of his redemption. Acts, 5 : 31. "Him hath God exalted with his right hand, for to give repentance unto Israel, and the remission of sins."

Christ's ascension into heaven was, as it were, his solemn coronation, when the Father set him upon the throne, and invested him with the glory of the kingdom he had purchased for himself, that he might thereby obtain the success of his redemption in conquering all his enemies. Psalm 110 : 1. "Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool." Christ entered into heaven in order to obtain the success of his purchase, as the high priest of old, after he had offered sacrifice, entered into the holy of holies with the blood of the sacrifice, in order to obtain the success of the sacrifice which he had offered. Heb. 9 : 12. He entered into



heaven, there to make intercession for his people, to plead the sacrifice which he had made in order to the success of it. Heb. 7 : 25. And as he ascended into heaven, God the Father in a visible manner set him on the throne as King of the universe. He then put the angels all under him, and subjected to him heaven and earth, that he might govern them for the good of the people for whom he died. Eph. 1 : 20-22. And as Christ rose from the dead, so he ascended into heaven, as the head of the body, and forerunner of all the church ; and they, as it were, ascend with him ; so that we are both raised up together, and made to sit together in heavenly places in Christ. Eph. 2 : 6.

The day of Christ's ascension was doubtless a joyful, glorious day in heaven. And as heaven received Christ, God-man, as its king, doubtless it received a great accession of glory and happiness. So that the times in both parts of the church, that part which is in heaven, and that which is on earth, are become more glorious since Christ's humiliation than before. This may suffice in respect to the things whereby Christ was put into the best capacity for obtaining the success of redemption.

### III. *Established Means of Success.*

I would now consider those dispensations of Providence by which the *means of this success* were established after Christ's resurrection.

I. The abolishing of the *Jewish dispensation*. This indeed was gradually done, but it began from the time of Christ's resurrection, in which the abolition of it is founded. For the *Jewish* dispensation

was not fitted for the practice of the world in general, or for a church of God dwelling in all parts of the earth. It would have been impossible for men living in all parts of the world to go to Jerusalem three times a year, as was prescribed in that constitution. When therefore God had a design of enlarging his church, as he did after Christ's resurrection, it was necessary that this dispensation should be abolished. If it had been continued, it would have been a great hinderance to the enlargement of the church. Besides, their ceremonial law, by reason of its burdensomeness and the great peculiarity of some of its rites, was a wall of partition between the Jews and Gentiles, and would have kept the Gentiles from complying with the true religion. This wall therefore was broken down to make way for the more extensive success of the Gospel. Eph. 2 : 14, 15.

II. The next thing in order of time seems to be the appointment of the *Christian Sabbath*. For though this was gradually established in the christian church, yet those things by which the revelation of God's mind and will was made, began on the day of Christ's resurrection, by his appearing then to his disciples. John, 20 : 19. And this appointment was afterwards confirmed, by his appearing from time to time on that day rather than any other, John, 20 : 26; by his sending down the Holy Spirit so remarkably on that day, Acts, 2 : 1 ; and afterwards by directing that the public worship of Christians should be on that day, which may be concluded from Acts, 20 : 7. 1 Cor. 16 : 1, 2. and Rev. 1 : 10. And so the day of the week on which Christ rose from the dead, that joyful day, is appointed to be the day of

the church's holy rejoicing to the end of the world, and the day of their stated public worship. And this is a very great and principal means of the success which the Gospel has had in the world.

III. The next thing was Christ's appointment of the *gospel ministry*, by commissioning and sending forth his apostles to teach and baptize all nations. Matt. 28 : 19, 20. "Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." There were three things done by this one commission of Christ to his apostles:

1. The appointment of the *office* of the gospel-ministry. For this commission which Christ gives to his apostles, in the most essential parts of it, belongs to all ministers; and the apostles, by virtue of it, were ministers or elders of the church.

2. Something peculiar in this commission: to go forth *from one nation to another*, preaching the Gospel in all the world. The apostles had something above what belonged to their ordinary character as ministers; they had an extraordinary power of teaching and ruling, which extended to all the churches; and not only all the churches that then were, but all that should be to the end of the world by their ministry. And so the apostles were, in subordination to Christ, made foundations of the Christian church. See Eph. 2 : 20, and Rev. 21 : 14.

3. Here is an appointment of Christian *baptism*. This ordinance indeed had a beginning before. Both

John the Baptist and Christ baptized. But now especially by this institution is it established as an ordinance to be upheld in the Christian church to the end of the world. The ordinance of the Lord's supper had been established just before Christ's crucifixion.

IV. The next thing is the enduing of the apostles, and others, with extraordinary and *miraculous gifts* of the Holy Ghost; such as the gift of tongues, the gift of healing, of prophecy, &c. The Spirit of God was poured out abundantly in this respect; so that not only ministers, but a very great part of the Christians through the world were endued with them, both old and young; not only officers and more honorable persons, but servants and hand-maids, agreeably to Joel's prophecy, ch. 2 : 28, 29; of which the apostle Peter takes notice, that it is accomplished in this dispensation. Acts, 2 : 11.

How wonderful a dispensation was this! Under the Old Testament but few had such honor put upon them by God. Moses indeed wished that all the Lord's people were prophets, Numb. 11 : 29; whereas Joshua thought it much that Eldad and Medad prophesied. But now we find the wish of Moses fulfilled. And this continued in a very considerable degree to the end of the apostolic age, or the first hundred years after the birth of Christ, which is therefore called *the age of miracles*.

This was a great means of the success of the Gospel, and of establishing the Christian church, not only in that age, but in all ages to the end of the world. For Christianity being established through so great a part of the known world by miracles, it was after that more easily continued by tradition;

and by means of these extraordinary gifts of the Holy Ghost, the apostles and others were enabled to write the New Testament, to be an infallible and perpetual rule of faith and practice to the church. And these miracles recorded in those writings are a standing proof of the truth of Christianity to all ages.

V. The next thing is the *revealing of those glorious doctrines fully and plainly*, which had under the Old Testament been obscurely revealed. The doctrine of Christ's satisfaction and righteousness, his ascension and glory, and the way of salvation, were, under the Old Testament, in a great measure hid under the vail of types and shadows, and more obscure revelations, as Moses put a vail on his face, to hide the shining of it; but now the vail of the temple is rent from the top to the bottom. Christ, the antitype of Moses, shines; his face is without a vail. 2 Cor. 3: 12, 13, and 18. Now these glorious mysteries, which were in a great measure kept secret from the foundation of the world, are clearly revealed. Eph. 3: 3-5. Rom. 16: 25. "According to the revelation of the mystery which was kept secret since the world began, but is now made manifest." Col. 1: 26. "Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and generations, but now is made manifest to his saints."

Thus the Sun of righteousness, after it is risen, begins to shine forth clearly, and not by a dim reflection as before. Christ, before his death, revealed many things more clearly than ever they had been in the Old Testament; but the great mysteries of Christ's redemption, reconciliation by his death, and justification by his righteousness, were not so plainly revealed before Christ's resurrection. Christ gave

this reason for it, that he would not put new wine into old bottles ; and it was gradually done even after his resurrection. In all probability, Christ much more clearly instructed them personally after his resurrection, and before his ascension ; as we read that he continued with them for forty days, speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom, Acts, 1 : 3 ; and that " he opened their understandings, that they might understand the Scriptures." Luke, 24 : 45. But the clear revelation of these things was principally after the outpouring of the Spirit on the day of Pentecost, agreeable to Christ's promise. John, 16 : 12, 13. " I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit, when the Spirit of truth is come, he shall guide you into all truth." This clear revelation of the mysteries of the Gospel, as they are delivered, we have chiefly through the hands of the apostle Paul, by whose writings a child may come to know more of the doctrines of the Gospel, in many respects, than the greatest prophets knew under the darkness of the Old Testament.

Thus we see how the light of the Gospel, which began to dawn immediately after the fall, and gradually increased through all the ages of the Old Testament, is now come to the light of perfect day, as the brightness of the sun shining forth in his unvailed glory.

VI. The next thing that I would observe, is the appointment of the office of deacons in the christian church, of which we have an account in the 6th chapter of the Acts, to take care for the outward supply of the members of Christ's church, and the exercise of that great christian virtue, charity.

VII. The calling, qualifying and sending of the apostle Paul. This was begun in his conversion as he was going to Damascus, and was one of the greatest means of the success of Christ's redemption that followed; for this success was more by the labors, preaching and writings of this apostle, than all the other apostles together: he "labored more abundantly than they all." As he was the apostle of the Gentiles, so it was mainly by his ministry that the Gentiles were called and the Gospel spread through the world. Our nation and the nations of Europe have the Gospel among them chiefly through his means; and he was more employed by the Holy Ghost in revealing the glorious doctrines of the Gospel by his writings, for the use of the church in all ages, than all the other apostles.

VIII. The institution of ecclesiastical councils for deciding controversies and ordering the affairs of the church of Christ, as described, Acts, 15:9.

IX. The *committing of the New Testament to writing*. This was all written after the resurrection of Christ by the apostles themselves, except the gospels of Mark and Luke, and the book of the Acts. He that wrote the gospel of Mark is supposed to be the son of Mary, in whose house they were praying for Peter when he, brought out of prison by the angel, came and knocked at the door. Acts, 12:12. "He came to the house of Mary, the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together praying." He was the companion of the apostles Barnabas and Paul. Acts, 15:37. He was Barnabas' sister's son, and seems some time to have been a compa-

nion of the apostle Paul. Col. 4 : 10. "Aristarchus, my fellow-prisoner, saluteth you and Marcus, sister's son to Barnabas; touching whom ye received commandment: if he come unto you receive him." The apostles seem to have made great account of him, as appears by those places, and also by Acts, 12 : 25; "And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, and took with them John, whose surname was Mark;" and Acts, 13 : 5; "And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews; and they had also John to their minister;" and 2 Tim. 4 : 11; "Only Luke is with me: take Mark and bring him with thee; for he is profitable to me for the ministry."

He who wrote the gospel of Luke and the book of Acts was a great companion of the apostle Paul. He is spoken of as being with him in the last-mentioned place, and speaks of himself as accompanying Paul in his travels, and therefore speaks in the first person plural *We* went to such a place; *we* set sail, &c. He was greatly beloved by the apostle Paul; he is that beloved physician spoken of, Col. 4 : 14. The apostle ranks Mark and Luke among his fellow-laborers. Philemon, 24. "Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-laborers."

The books of the New Testament are either historical, doctrinal, or prophetical. The *historical* books are the writings of the four evangelists, giving us the history of Christ, in his purchase of redemption, his resurrection and ascension; and the Acts of the Apostles, giving an account of the great things by which the Christian church was first established and propagated. The *doctrinal* books are the epistles; most of which we have from the great apostle



Paul. And we have one *prophetical* book, which takes place after the end of the history of the whole Bible, and gives an account of the great events by which the work of redemption was to be carried on to the end of the world.

All these books are supposed to have been written before the destruction of Jerusalem, excepting those written by the apostle John, who lived the longest of all the apostles, and wrote, as is supposed, after the destruction of Jerusalem. To this beloved disciple it was that Christ revealed those wonderful things which were to come to pass in his church to the end of time; and he put the finishing hand to the canon of Scripture, and sealed the whole of it. So that now the canon of Scripture, that great and standing written rule, which was begun about Moses' time, is completed and settled, and a curse denounced against him that adds any thing to it, or diminishes any thing from it. And so all the stated means of grace were finished in the apostolical age, or before the death of the apostle John, and are to remain unaltered to the day of judgment. Thus far we have considered those things by which the means of grace were given and established in the christian church.

#### IV. *How the Success was carried on.*

From Christ's resurrection till the fall of Antichrist, is the appointed day of Zion's troubles. During this period, some part or other of the church is under persecution; and a great part of the time this is true of the whole church, or at least the great body of God's people. For the first three hundred

years after Christ, the church was generally in a state of great affliction, the object of reproach and persecution—first by the Jews, and then by the Heathen. After this, from the beginning of Constantine's time, the church had rest and prosperity for a little while: which is represented, Rev. 7, by the angel's holding the four winds for a little while. But presently after, the church again suffered persecution from the Arians. After that, Antichrist rose; the church was driven away into the wilderness; was kept down in obscurity, contempt, and suffering, for a long time before the reformation by Luther and others. And since the Reformation, the church's persecutions have been beyond all that ever were before. And though some parts of God's church sometimes have had rest, yet, to this day, for the most part, the true church is very much kept under by its enemies, and some parts of it under grievous persecution. And so we may expect it will continue till the fall of Antichrist. Then will come the appointed day of the church's prosperity on earth, the set time in which God will favor Zion, the time when the saints shall not be kept under by wicked men, but wherein they shall reign, as it is said, Rev. 5 : 10. "And the kingdom shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High." Dan. 7 : 27.

The suffering state of the church is in Scripture represented as a state of the church's travail, (John, 16 : 20, 21, and Rev. 12 : 1, 2,) striving to bring forth that glory and prosperity which shall be after the fall of Antichrist, and then shall she bring forth her child. This is a long time of the church's trouble and affliction though it be but for a little

season, in comparison of the eternal prosperity of the church. Hence, under the continuance of this affliction, she cries out, Rev. 6 : 10, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?" And we are told that "white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled." So Dan. 12 : 6. "How long shall it be to the end of these wonders?"

It is to be observed, that during the time of these sufferings of the church, the main instrument of their sufferings has been the Roman government. Rome, therefore, in the New Testament, is called *Babylon*; because, as of old, the troubles of the city of Jerusalem were mainly from that adverse city Babylon, so the troubles of the christian church, the spiritual Jerusalem, during the long time of its tribulation, are mainly from Rome. Before the time of Constantine, the troubles of the christian church were from Heathen Rome; since that time, its troubles have been mainly from Antichristian Rome. And as of old, the captivity of the Jews ceased on the destruction of Babylon, so the time of the trouble of the christian church will cease with the destruction of the church of Rome, that spiritual Babylon.

## CHAPTER I.

FROM THE RESURRECTION OF CHRIST TO THE  
DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM.

In speaking of the success of Christ's redemption in this period, I shall notice, 1. the success itself; 2. the opposition made against it by its enemies; and, 3. the terrible judgments of God on those enemies.

I. The *success itself*. Soon after Christ had entered into the holy of holies with his own blood, there began a glorious success of what he had done and suffered. Having undermined the foundation of Satan's kingdom, it began to fall apace. Swiftly did it hasten to ruin, which might well be compared to Satan's falling like lightning from heaven. Satan had exalted his throne very high in this world, even to the stars of heaven, reigning with great glory in his heathen Roman empire; but never had he such a downfall as soon after Christ's ascension. We may suppose he had been triumphing in the death of Christ, as the greatest victory he had ever gained; and probably he imagined he had totally defeated God's design. But he was quickly made sensible that he had only been ruining his own kingdom, when he saw it falling so fast as a consequence of the death of Christ. For Christ, having ascended, and received the Holy Spirit, poured it forth abundantly for the conversion of thousands and millions of souls.

Never had Christ's kingdom been so advanced. Probably more souls were converted in the age of the apostles than had been before from the begin-

ning of the world till that time. Thus God so soon began gloriously to accomplish his promise to his Son, that he should see his seed, and that the pleasure of the Lord should prosper in his hand, if he would make his soul an offering for sin. And,

1. Here is to be observed the success which the Gospel had among the *Jews*; for God began with them. Being about to reject the main body of that people, he first calls in his elect from among them. It was so in former great and dreadful judgments of God on that nation: the bulk of them were destroyed, and only a remnant saved or reformed. The bulk of the ten tribes was rejected when they left the true worship of God under Jeroboam, and more fully in Ahab's time; but yet a remnant of them was reserved. Many left their possessions in these tribes, and settled in the tribes of Judah and Benjamin; but there were seven thousand in Ahab's time who had not bowed the knee to Baal. From the captivity into Babylon, only a remnant of them ever returned to their own land. So now the greater part of the people were rejected entirely, but some few were saved. And the Holy Ghost compares this reservation of a number converted by the preaching of the apostles, to those former remnants. Rom. 9 : 27 : "Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved." See Isa. 10 : 22.

The glorious success of the Gospel among the Jews after Christ's ascension, began by the pouring out of the Spirit upon the day of Pentecost. Acts, 2. So wonderful was this effusion, that we read of three thousand converted to the christian faith in one day. Acts, 2 : 41. And after this, God added to the church

daily such as should be saved. Soon after, the number of them was about five thousand. Thus were not only a multitude converted, but the church was then eminent in piety, as appears by Acts, 2: 46, 47; 4: 32.

Thus the christian church was first formed from the nation of Israel, and when the Gentiles were called they were *added* to the christian church of Israel, as the proselytes of old were to the Mosaic church of Israel. They were *grafted* on the stock of Abraham, and were not a distinct tree: they were all still the seed of Abraham and Israel; as Ruth the Moabitess, and Uriah the Hittite, and other proselytes of old, were the same people, and ranked as the seed of Israel.

The christian church began at Jerusalem, and from thence was propagated to all nations; so that this church of Jerusalem was the mother of all other churches in the world; agreeable to the prophecy, Isa. 2: 3, 4, "Out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem: and he shall judge among the nations, and rebuke many people." So that the whole church of God is still his spiritual Jerusalem.

After this we read of many thousands of Jews that believed in Jerusalem, (Acts, 21: 20,) in other cities of Judea, and in other parts of the world. For it was the manner of the apostles to go first into the synagogues of the Jews and preach the Gospel to them; and many in one place and another believed, as in Damascus, Antioch, and many other places.

In this outpouring of the Spirit at the Pentecost, began that first great dispensation which is called *Christ's coming in his kingdom*. Christ's coming thus in a spiritual manner for the glorious erection

of his kingdom in the world, is represented as his coming down from heaven, whither he had ascended. John, 14 : 18. " I will not leave you comfortless ; I will come to you." And verse 28. " Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you." And thus the apostles began to see the kingdom of heaven come with power, as he promised them. Mark, 9 : 1.

2. After the success of the Gospel had been so gloriously begun among the Jews, the Spirit of God was next wonderfully poured out on the *Samaritans*, who were the posterity of those whom the king of Assyria removed from different parts of his dominions, and settled in the land which had been inhabited by the ten tribes, whom he carried captive. These had received the five books of Moses, and practiced most of the Mosaic rites, and so were a sort of *mongrel Jews*. We do not find them reckoned as Gentiles in the New Testament : for the calling of the Gentiles is spoken of as a new thing after this, beginning with the conversion of Cornelius. But yet it was an instance of making those a people who were no people ; for they had corrupted the religion of Moses, and did not go up to Jerusalem to worship. They had another temple of their own in Mount Gerizim ; which is the mountain of which the woman of Samaria speaks, when she says, " Our fathers worshiped in this mountain." Christ there does not approve of their separation from the Jews ; but says that they worshiped they knew not what, and that salvation is of the Jews. But now salvation is brought from the Jews to them by the preaching of Philip, (excepting that before Christ had some success among them,) with whose preach-

ing there was a glorious effusion of the Spirit of God in the city of Samaria; where we are told that "the people believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of Christ, and were baptized, both men and women; and that there was great joy in that city." Acts, 8 : 8-12.

Thus Christ had a glorious harvest in Samaria; according to what he said to his disciples at Jacob's well, three or four years before, on occasion of the people of Samaria appearing at a distance in the fields coming to the place where he was. John, 4 : 35, 36. The disposition which the people of Samaria manifested towards Christ and his Gospel showed that they were ripe for the harvest; and now the harvest is come by Philip's preaching. There used to be a most bitter enmity between the Jews and Samaritans; but now, by their conversion, the Christian Jews and Samaritans are happily united; for in Christ Jesus there is neither Jew nor Samaritan, but Christ is all in all. This was a glorious instance of the wolf dwelling with the lamb, and the leopard lying down with the kid.

3. The next thing to be observed is the *calling the Gentiles*. This was a great and glorious dispensation, much spoken of in the Old Testament, and by the apostles. It was begun in the conversion of Cornelius and his family, greatly to the admiration of Peter, who was used as the instrument of it, and of those who were with him. Acts, 10 and 11. The next instance was the conversion of great numbers of Gentiles in Cyprus, Cyrene, and Antioch, by the disciples who were scattered abroad by the persecution which arose about Stephen. Acts, 11 : 19, 20, 21. And presently,



upon this, the disciples began to be called Christians first at Antioch.

After this vast multitudes of Gentiles were converted in different parts of the world, chiefly by the ministry of the apostle Paul, which was accompanied by a glorious outpouring of the Spirit. Multitudes flocked into the church of Christ in a great number of cities where the apostle came. So the number of Gentile members of the Christian church soon far exceeded that of its Jewish members; yea, in less than ten years after Paul was sent forth from Antioch to preach to the Gentiles, it was said of him and his companions, that they had turned the world upside down. Acts, 17 : 6. "These that have turned the world upside down are come hither also." But the most remarkable instance seems to be that in *Ephesus*, which was a very great city. Acts, 19. There was also a very extraordinary ingathering of souls at *Corinth*, one of the greatest cities of Greece. And after this many were converted in *Rome*, then the chief city of the known world; and the Gospel was propagated into all parts of the Roman empire. Thus the gospel-sun which had lately risen on the Jews, now rose upon and began to enlighten the Heathen world, after they had continued in gross heathenish darkness for so many ages.

This was a great thing, such as never had been before. All nations but the Jews, and a few who had occasionally joined them, had been rejected from about the time of Moses. The Gentile world had been covered with the thick darkness of idolatry; but now, at the joyful sound of the Gospel, they began in all parts to forsake their idols, and to cast them to the moles and to the bats. They now learn-

ed to worship the true God, and to trust in his Son Jesus Christ. God owned them for his people; and those who had so long been afar off, were made nigh by the blood of Christ. Men, from being heathenish and brutish, became the children of God; were called out of Satan's kingdom of darkness, and brought into God's marvelous light. In almost all countries throughout the known world there were Christian assemblies, and joyful praises were sung to the true God, and Jesus Christ the glorious Redeemer. Now that great building which God began soon after the fall of man, rises gloriously, in a new manner; now Daniel's prophecies concerning the last kingdom, which should succeed the four heathenish monarchies, begin to be fulfilled; now the stone cut out of the mountain without hands, begins to smite the image on its feet, to break it in pieces, and to make great advances towards filling the earth; and now God gathers together his elect from the four winds of heaven, by the preaching of the apostles and other ministers, (the angels of the christian church sent forth with the great sound of the gospel-trumpet,) before the destruction of Jerusalem, agreeably to what Christ had foretold. Matt. 24: 31.

II. I would now notice the *opposition* made to this success of Christ's purchase by its enemies. Satan, who lately was so ready to triumph and exult, as though he had gained the victory in putting Christ to death, now finding himself fallen into the pit which he had digged, and his kingdom falling so fast, and seeing Christ's kingdom make such amazing progress, was filled with the greatest confusion and astonishment; and hell seemed to be

effectually alarmed to make the most violent opposition against it. And, first, the devil stirred up the Jews, who had before crucified Christ, to persecute the church; for it is observable, that the persecution which the church suffered during this period, was mostly from the Jews. Thus we read in the Acts, when the Holy Ghost was poured out at Pentecost, how the Jews mocked, and said, "These men are full of new wine;" and how the scribes and Pharisees, and the captain of the temple, were alarmed, and bestirred themselves to oppose and persecute the apostles. They first apprehended and threatened them, and afterwards imprisoned and beat them; and breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, they stoned Stephen in a tumultuous rage; and were not content to persecute those they could find in Judea, but sent abroad to Damascus and other places, to persecute all they could find every where. Herod, who was chief among them, stretched forth his hands to vex the church, and killed James with the sword, and proceeded to take Peter also, and cast him into prison.

So, in other countries, almost wherever the apostles came, the Jews opposed the Gospel in a most malignant manner, contradicting and blaspheming. How many things did the blessed apostle Paul suffer at their hands! How violent and bloodthirsty did they show themselves towards him, when he came to bring alms to his nation! In this persecution and cruelty was fulfilled that saying of Christ, Matt. 23 : 34, "Behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and some of them ye shall kill and crucify, and some of them shall ye

scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city."

III. *The judgments executed on those enemies of Christ, the persecuting Jews.*

1. The bulk of the people were given up to judicial blindness of mind and hardness of heart. Christ denounced such a wo upon them in the days of his flesh. Matt. 13 : 14, 15. This curse was also denounced on them by the apostle Paul, Acts, 28 : 25, 26, 27 ; and under this curse, this judicial blindness and hardness, they remain to this very day, having been subject to it for about seventeen hundred years, being the most awful instance of such a judgment and monument of God's terrible vengeance. That they should continue from generation to generation so obstinately to reject Christ, so that it is a very rare thing that any one of them is converted to the christian faith—though their own Scriptures of the Old Testament are so full of plain testimonies against them—is a remarkable evidence of their being dreadfully left of God.

2. They were rejected from being any longer God's visible people. They were broken off from the stock of Abraham, and since that have no more been reputed his seed, than the Ishmaelites or Edomites, who are as much his natural seed as they. The greater part of the two tribes were now cast off, as the ten tribes had been before, and another people were taken in their room, agreeable to the predictions of their own prophets. Deut. 32 : 21. "They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God ; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities ; and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people ; I will

provoke them to anger with a foolish nation." Isaiah, 65 : 1. "I am sought of them that asked not for me ; I am found of them that sought me not." They were visibly rejected by God's directing his apostles to turn away from them, and let them alone. Acts, 13 : 36, 47. "Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you ; but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles ; for so hath the Lord commanded us." Acts, 18 : 6, and 28 : 28.

Thus far we have the scripture history to guide us : henceforward we shall have the guidance only of scripture prophecy and human history.

3. The third and last judgment of God on those enemies of the success of the Gospel which I shall mention, is the terrible destruction of their city and country by the Romans. They had great warnings and many means used with them before this destruction. First, John the Baptist warned them, and told them, that the axe was laid at the root of the tree ; and that every tree which should not bring forth good fruit, should be hewn down, and cast into the fire. Then Christ warned them very particularly, and told them of their approaching destruction, at the thoughts of which he wept over them. And then the apostles, after Christ's ascension, abundantly warned them. But they proved obstinate, and continued their opposition to Christ and his church, and their bitter persecuting practices. Their so malignantly persecuting the apostle Paul, of which we have an account towards the

end of the Acts of the Apostles, is supposed to have been not more than seven or eight years before their destruction.

After this, God was pleased to give them one more very remarkable warning by the apostle Paul, in his epistle to the Hebrews, written, it is supposed, about four years before their destruction; wherein the plainest and clearest arguments are set before them from their own law, and from their prophets, for whom they professed such a regard, to prove that Christ Jesus must be the Son of God, that all their law typified him, and that the Jewish dispensation must needs have ceased. For though the epistle was more immediately directed to the Christian Hebrews, yet the matter of the epistle plainly shows that the apostle intended it for the use and conviction of the unbelieving Jews. And in this epistle he mentions particularly the approaching destruction. Chap. 10 : 25. "So much the more, as ye see the day approaching;" and in ver. 27, he speaks of the approaching judgment and "fiery indignation which should devour the adversaries."

But the mass of them, refusing to receive conviction, God soon destroyed with such terrors, as the destruction of no country or city since the foundation of the world can parallel: agreeable to what Christ foretold. Matt. 24 : 21. "For then shall be tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be." The destruction of Jerusalem by the Babylonians was very terrible, as it is in a most affecting manner described by the prophet Jeremiah, in his Lamentations; but that was as nothing to the dreadful misery and wrath which they suffered in this destruction. God,

as Christ foretold, brought on them all the righteous blood that had been shed from the foundation of the world. Thus the enemies of Christ are made his footstool after his ascension, agreeable to God's promise, Psalm 110 ; and he rules them with a rod of iron. The briars and thorns set themselves against him in battle ; but he went through them ; he burned them together.

This destruction of Jerusalem was in all respects agreeable to what Christ had foretold of it, Matt. 24 ; as appears by the account which Josephus gives of it, who was then present, had a share in the calamity, and wrote the history of their destruction. Many circumstances resembled the destruction of the wicked at the day of judgment ; by his account, it was accompanied with many fearful sights in the heavens, and with a separation of the righteous from the wicked. Their city and temple were burnt, and razed to the ground ; and the ground on which the city stood was ploughed, so that one stone was not left upon another. Matt. 24 : 2.

The people had ceased for the most part to be an independent government after the Babylonish captivity ; but the sceptre entirely departed from Judah on the death of Archelaus, when Judea was made a Roman province. After this, they were cast off from being the people of God : but now their very city and land are utterly destroyed, and they carried away from it ; and so have continued in their dispersions through the world for now above sixteen hundred years.

Thus there was a final end put to the Old Testament world : all was finished with a kind of day of judgment, in which the people of God were saved,

and his enemies terribly destroyed. Thus does Christ, who was so lately mocked, despised, and spit upon by these Jews, and whose followers they so malignantly persecuted, appear gloriously exalted over his enemies.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### FROM THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM TO THE TIME OF CONSTANTINE.

Jerusalem was destroyed about the year of our Lord sixty-eight, and so before that generation passed away which was contemporary with Christ. The destruction of the Heathen empire under Constantine was about two hundred and sixty years after this. In showing how the success of the Gospel was carried on through this time, I would notice, 1. The opposition made against it by the Roman empire; 2. How the work of the Gospel progressed, notwithstanding all that opposition; 3. The peculiar circumstances of tribulation and distress to the church just before their deliverance by Constantine; and 4. The great revolution in Constantine's time.

I. The *opposition* made against the Gospel, and the kingdom of Christ, *by the Roman empire*. This opposition was mainly after the destruction of Jerusalem, though it began before; but that which was before the destruction of Jerusalem, was mainly by



the Jews. When Jerusalem was destroyed, the Jews were much incapacitated for troubling the church; the devil therefore used other instruments. The opposition made in the Roman empire against the kingdom of Christ, was chiefly of two kinds.

1. They employed all their learning, philosophy, and wit, in opposing it. Christ came into the world in an age wherein learning and philosophy were at their height in the Roman empire. The Gospel, which held forth a crucified Savior, was not at all agreeable to the notions of the philosophers. The christian scheme of trusting in such a crucified Redeemer, appeared to them foolish and ridiculous. Greece was a country the most famous for learning of any in the Roman empire: but the apostle observes, that the doctrine of Christ crucified appeared foolishness to the Greeks, 1 Cor. 1: 23; and therefore the wise men and philosophers opposed the Gospel. We have a specimen of their manner of opposing, in their treatment of the apostle Paul at Athens, which was, and had been for many ages, the chief seat of philosophers in all the world. We read, Acts, 17: 18, that the philosophers of the Epicureans and Stoics encountered him, saying, "What will this babbler say? He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods." Thus they were wont to deride and ridicule Christianity; and, after the destruction of Jerusalem, several philosophers published books against it. The chief of these were Celsus and Porphyry, who wrote with a great deal of virulence and contempt, much after the manner of the Deists of the present age. As great enemies and despisers as they were of the christian religion, they never denied the facts recorded of Christ and

his apostles in the New Testament, particularly the miracles which they wrought, but allowed them. They lived too near the times of these miracles to deny them; for they were so publicly done, and so lately, that neither Jews nor Heathens in those days appeared to deny them; but they ascribed them to the power of magic.

2. The authority of the Roman empire employed all their strength, time after time, to persecute and if possible to root out Christianity. We have heretofore observed that Christ came into the world when the strength of Heathen dominion and authority was the greatest under the Roman monarchy. All the strength of this monarchy was employed for a long time to oppose and persecute the christian church, and if possible to destroy it, in ten successive attempts, which are called *the ten Heathen persecutions*.

The *first* of these, which was the persecution under Nero, was a little before the destruction of Jerusalem, in which the apostle Peter was crucified, and the apostle Paul beheaded, soon after he wrote his second epistle to Timothy. When he wrote that epistle, he was a prisoner at Rome under Nero, and says, chap. 4 : 6, 7, "I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith." There were many thousands of other Christians slain in that persecution. The other nine persecutions were all after the destruction of Jerusalem. Some of these were terrible indeed, and far exceeded the first persecution under Nero. One emperor after another set himself with the utmost rage to root out the chris-

tian church from the earth, that there should not be so much as the name of Christian left in the world. Thousands, yea millions were put to cruel deaths; for they spared neither sex nor age.

In the *second* general persecution, (under Domitian,) that which was next after the destruction of Jerusalem, the apostle John was banished to the isle of Patmos, where he had those visions which he has recorded in the Revelation. Under that persecution it was reckoned that about forty thousand suffered martyrdom; which yet were few compared with the number put to death in some succeeding persecutions. Ten thousand suffered that one kind of cruel death, crucifixion, in the *third* persecution under the emperor Adrian. Under the *fourth* persecution, which began about the year of Christ 162, many suffered martyrdom in England, the land of our forefathers, where Christianity had been planted, it is supposed, in the days of the apostles. And in the *later* persecutions, the Roman emperors, being vexed at the failure of their predecessors, who were not able to extirpate Christianity or hinder its progress, were enraged to be the more violent in their attempts.

Thus a great part of the first three hundred years after Christ was spent in violent and cruel persecutions of the church by the Roman powers. Satan was very unwilling to quit his hold of so great and distinguished a part of the world as the countries contained in the Roman empire, of which he had had the quiet possession for so many ages: and therefore, when he saw it going so fast out of his hands, he bestirred himself to his utmost. All hell was raised to oppose it with its utmost power.

Satan thus exerting himself by the power of the Heathen Roman empire, is called *the great red dragon*, having seven heads and ten horns, fighting against the woman clothed with the sun. Rev. 12. And this terrible conflict between the church of Christ and the powers of the Heathen empire before Constantine, is represented by the war between Michael and his angels, and the dragon and his angels, "And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought, and the dragon fought and his angels."

II. I would notice what *success* the Gospel had in the world before the time of Constantine, notwithstanding all this opposition. Though the learning and power of the Roman empire were so great, and both were employed to the utmost against Christianity; yet all was in vain. They could neither root it out, nor stop its progress. In spite of all, the kingdom of Christ wonderfully prevailed, and Satan's Heathen kingdom mouldered and consumed away before it, agreeable to the text, "The moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool." And it was very observable, that for the most part the more they persecuted the church, the more it increased; insomuch that it became a common saying, *The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the church*. Herein the church of Christ proved to be like a palm-tree; of which it is said, that the greater weight is hung to its branches, the more it grows and flourishes. On this account, probably, the church is compared to a palm-tree. Cant. 7: 7. "This thy stature is like to a palm-tree." JUSTIN MARTYR, an eminent father in the christian church, who lived in the age next after the apostles,

says, that in his days there was no part of mankind, whether Greeks or barbarians, or by what name soever they were called, even the most rude and unpolished nations, where prayers and thanksgivings were not made to the great Creator of the world, through the name of the crucified Jesus. TERTULLIAN, another eminent father in the Christian church, who lived in the beginning of the following age, testifies, that in his day the Christian religion had extended itself to the utmost bounds of the then known world, in which he reckons Britain; and thence demonstrates that the kingdom of Christ was then more extensive than any of the four great monarchies. He moreover says, that though the Christians were as strangers of no long standing, yet they had filled all places of the Roman dominions, their cities, islands, castles, corporations, councils, armies, tribes, the palace, senate, and courts of judicature; they had left to the Heathen their temples only. He adds, that if they should all agree to retire out of the Roman empire, the world would be amazed at the solitude and desolation that would ensue upon it, there would be so few left; and that the Christians were enough to be able easily to defend themselves, if they were disposed to rise up in arms against the Heathen magistrates. And Pliny, a heathen who lived in those days, says, that multitudes of each sex, of every age and quality, were become Christians. This superstition, says he, having infected and overrun not the city only, but towns and countries, the temples and sacrifices are generally desolate and forsaken.

And it was remarked by both heathen and christian writers in those days, that the famous Heathen

oracles in their temples, where princes and others for many ages had been wont to inquire and receive answers in an audible voice, as was supposed, from their gods, were now struck dumb, and gave no more answers; and particularly the oracle at Delphos, the most famous in the whole world, which both Greeks and Romans used to consult, began to cease to give any answers, even from the birth of Christ. The false deity who was worshiped, and who used to give answers from his oracle in that temple, being once inquired of, why he did not now give answers as he was wont to do? made this reply, (as several heathen historians who lived about those times relate,) "There is a Hebrew boy who is king of the gods, who has commanded me to leave this house, and begone to hell, and therefore you are to expect no more answers." And many heathen writers who lived about that time speak much of the oracles being silenced, at which they wondered, not knowing what the cause should be. Plutarch wrote a particular treatise about it, which is still extant. And Porphyry, who opposed the christian religion, has these words: "It is no wonder if the city for these so many years has been overrun with sickness, Esculapius and the rest of the gods having withdrawn their converse with men; for since Jesus began to be worshiped, no man has received any public help or benefit by the gods." Thus did the kingdom of Christ prevail against the kingdom of Satan.

III. The peculiar circumstances of tribulation and distress just before Constantine the Great came to the throne. This distress was suffered under the tenth heathen persecution, which, as it was the last, so it was by far the heaviest and most severe. The

church before this, after the ceasing of the *ninth* persecution, had enjoyed a time of quietness for about forty years; but, abusing their liberty, they began to grow cold and lifeless in religion, and contentions prevailed among them; by which they provoked God to suffer this dreadful trial to come upon them. And Satan having lost ground so much, notwithstanding all his attempts, now seemed to bestir himself with unwonted rage. Those who were then in authority set themselves with the utmost violence to root out Christianity, by burning all Bibles, and destroying all Christians; and therefore they did not stand to try or convict them in a formal process, but fell upon them wherever they could. Sometimes they set fire to houses where multitudes of them were assembled, burning them all together; at other times they slaughtered such multitudes that their persecutors were quite spent with the labor of killing and tormenting them; and in some populous places so many were slain together, that the blood ran like torrents. It is related, that seventeen thousand martyrs were slain in one month; and that during the continuance of this persecution, in the province of Egypt alone, no less than *one hundred and forty-four thousand* Christians died by the violence of their persecutors, besides *seven hundred thousand* that died through the fatigues of banishment, or the public works to which they were condemned.

This persecution lasted for ten years; and as it exceeded all foregoing persecutions in the number of martyrs, so it exceeded them in the variety and multitude of inventions of torture and cruelty. Some authors who lived at that time, say they were innumerable, and exceed all account and expression.

This persecution in particular was very severe in England; and is that which was foretold, Rev. 6 : 9, 10. "And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the Word of God, and for the testimony which they held. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?" And at the end of the ten years, during which this persecution continued, the heathen persecutors thought they had finished their work, and boasted that they had utterly destroyed the name and superstition of the Christians, and had restored and propagated the worship of the gods.

Thus it was the darkest time with the christian church, just before the break of day. They were brought to the greatest extremity before God appeared for their glorious deliverance, as the bondage of the Israelites in Egypt was the most severe and cruel just before their deliverance by the hand of Moses. Their enemies thought they had swallowed them up, and sealed their destruction, as Pharaoh and his host thought when they hemmed in the children of Israel at the Red Sea.

IV. I come now to *the great revolution by Constantine*, which was in many respects like Christ's appearing in the clouds of heaven to save his people, and judge the world. The people of Rome being weary of the government of those tyrants to whom they had lately been subject, sent to Constantine, who was then in the city of York in England, to come and take the throne. He was encouraged, it is said, by a vision of a pillar of light in the heavens, in the form of a cross, in the sight of his



whole army, with this inscription, *ἐν τούτῳ νικά, in this overcome*; and the night following, by Christ's appearing to him in a dream with the same cross in his hand, who directed him to make a cross like that to be his royal standard, that his army might fight under that banner, and assured him that he should conquer. Accordingly he overcame his enemies, took possession of the imperial throne, embraced the christian religion, and was the first christian emperor that ever reigned. He came to the throne about three hundred and twenty years after Christ. There are several things which I would notice that attended, or immediately followed, Constantine's coming to the throne.

1. The christian church was thereby wholly delivered from persecution. Now the day of her deliverance came after such a dark night of affliction: weeping had continued for a night, but now deliverance and joy came in the morning. Now God appeared to judge his people, and repented himself for his servants, when he saw their power was gone, and that there was none shut up or left. Christians had no persecutions now to fear. Their persecutors now were all put down, and their rulers were some of them Christians like themselves.

2. God now appeared to execute terrible judgments on their enemies. Remarkable are the accounts which history gives of the fearful ends to which the heathen emperors, princes, generals, captains, and other great men were brought, who had exerted themselves in persecuting the Christians; dying miserably, one after another, under exquisite torments of body, and horrors of conscience, with a most visible hand of God upon them. So that

what now came to pass, might very fitly be compared to their hiding themselves in the dens and rocks of the mountains.

3. Heathenism now was in a great measure abolished throughout the Roman empire. Images were destroyed, and Heathen temples pulled down. Images of gold and silver were melted down and coined into money. Some of the chief of their idols, which were curiously wrought, were brought to Constantinople, and there drawn with ropes up and down the streets for the people to behold and laugh at. The Heathen priests were dispersed and banished.

4. The Christian church was brought into a state of great peace and prosperity. Now all Heathen magistrates were put down, and only Christians were advanced to places of authority all over the empire. They had now christian presidents, christian governors, christian judges and officers, instead of their old heathenish ones. Constantine set himself to put honor upon christian bishops or ministers, and to build and adorn churches; and large and beautiful christian churches were erected in all parts of the world, instead of the old Heathen temples.

This revolution was the greatest that had occurred since the flood. Satan, the prince of darkness, that king and god of the Heathen world, was cast out. The roaring lion was conquered by the Lamb of God, in the strongest dominion that ever he had. This was a remarkable accomplishment of Jer. 10: 11. "The gods that have not made the heaven and the earth, even they shall perish from the earth, and from under these heavens." The chief part of the world was now brought utterly to cast off their old

gods and their old religion, to which they had been accustomed much longer than any of their histories relate—so long, that they knew not any beginning of it. It was formerly spoken of as a thing unknown for a nation to change their gods, Jer. 2 : 10, 11 ; but now the greater part of the nations of the known world were brought to cast off their former gods. That multitude of gods which they worshiped, were all forsaken. Thousands of them were cast away for the worship of the true God, and Christ the only Savior ; and there was a most remarkable fulfillment of Isa. 2 : 17, 18. “ And the loftiness of man shall be bowed down, and the haughtiness of men shall be made low : and the Lord alone shall be exalted in that day. And the idols he shall utterly abolish.” And since that, those gods which were once so famous in the world, as Jupiter, and Saturn, and Minerva, and Juno, are only heard of as things of old. They have had no temples, no altars, no worshipers, for many hundred years.

Now is come the end of the old Heathen world in its principal part, the Roman empire. And this great revolution, with that terrible destruction of the great men who had been persecutors, is compared, Rev. 6, to the end of the world, and Christ’s coming to judgment ; and is most immediately signified under the sixth seal, which followed upon the souls under the altar crying, “ How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth ?” This vision of the sixth seal, by the general consent of expositors, has respect to this downfall of the Heathen Roman empire ; though it has a more remote respect to the day of judgment, of which this was a type. The day of

judgment cannot be what is immediately intended; because we have an account of many events which were to be after those of the sixth seal.

What came to pass now is also represented by the devil's being cast out of heaven to the earth. In his great strength and glory, over that mighty Roman empire, he had exalted his throne up to heaven. But now he fell like lightning from heaven, and his kingdom was confined to the meaner and more barbarous nations, or to the lower parts of the world. This is the event foretold. Rev. 12 : 9. "And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him." Satan had formerly tempted Christ, and promised to give him the glory of the kingdoms of the world; but now he is obliged to give it to him against his will. This was a glorious fulfillment of the promise which God made to his Son. Isa. 53 : 12. "Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors, and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors." This was a great fulfillment of the prophecies concerning the glorious time of the Gospel, and particularly those of Daniel. Now it pleased the Lord God of heaven to set up a kingdom on the ruins of Satan's kingdom. Such is the success of Christ's redemption, and such honor does the Father give him for the disgrace he suffered when on earth.

From what has been said of the success of the Gospel from Christ's ascension to the time of Con-

stantine, we may deduce a strong argument for the truth of the Christian religion, and that the Gospel of Jesus Christ is really from God. Particularly,

1. We may gather from what has been said, that *the Gospel, and that only, has actually been the means of bringing the world to the knowledge of the true God.* That those are no gods whom the Heathen worshiped, and that there is but one only God, is what, since the Gospel has so taught us, we can now see to be truth by our own reason. It is plainly agreeable to the light of nature, and it can easily be shown to be reasonably true. Deists themselves acknowledge that it can be demonstrated that there is one God, and but one, who has made and governs the world. But now it is evident that it is the Gospel, and that only, which has actually been the means of bringing men to the knowledge of this truth. It was not the instructions of philosophers; they tried in vain: *The world by wisdom knew not God.* Till the Gospel and the holy Scriptures were spread abroad, all the world lay in ignorance of the true God, and in the greatest darkness with respect to religion, embracing the most absurd opinions and practices, which all civilized nations now acknowledge to be childish fooleries. The light of nature, their own reason, and all the wisdom of learned men, availed nothing till the Scriptures came. But these were successful to bring the world to an acknowledgment of the one only true God, and to worship and serve him.

And hence it is, that all that part of the world which now acknowledges one only and true God—Christians, Jews, Mohammedans, and even Deists—originally came to own him. It is owing to this

that they are not in general at this day left in heathenish darkness. All the light they have, is either immediately from the Scriptures, or by tradition from their fathers, who had it first from the Scriptures. And doubtless those who now despise the Scriptures, and boast of the strength of their own reason, as sufficient to lead to the knowledge of the one true God, if the Gospel had not been spread abroad in the world to enlighten their forefathers, would have been as sottish and brutish idolaters as the world in general were before the Gospel. The Mohammedans, who own but one true God, received the idea from the Scriptures; for the first Mohammedans had been educated in the christian religion, and apostatized from it. It is evident that the Scriptures were designed of God to be the proper means of bringing the world to the knowledge of himself, rather than human reason, or any thing else. For it is unreasonable to suppose that the Gospel, unless God designed it as the proper means for obtaining this effect, should actually obtain it, and that after human reason for many ages had been tried in vain. If the Scriptures be not the word of God, they are nothing but darkness and delusion, yea, the greatest delusion. And is it reasonable to suppose that God in his providence would make use of falsehood and delusion to bring the world to the knowledge of himself, and that no part of it should be brought to the knowledge of him any other way?

2. The Gospel prevailing as it did against such powerful opposition, plainly shows the hand of God. The Roman government, that so violently set itself to hinder the success of the Gospel, and to subdue the Church of Christ, was the most powerful of go-

vernments; and not only so, but they seemed to have the church in their hands. The Christians who were under their command, never took up arms to defend themselves; they armed themselves with nothing but patience, and such like spiritual weapons; and yet this mighty power could not conquer, but, on the contrary, Christianity conquered them. The Roman empire had subdued many mighty and potent kingdoms; they subdued the Grecian monarchy, though it made the utmost resistance; and yet they could not conquer the church, which was in their hands; but, on the contrary, were subdued, and finally triumphed over by the church.

3. No other sufficient cause can possibly be assigned for this propagation of the Gospel, but the power of God. Here was a great and wonderful effect; and this effect was not without some cause. What other cause can be devised but the divine power? It was not the outward strength of the instruments employed in it. At first the Gospel was preached only by a few fishermen, who were without power and worldly interest to support them. It was not their craft and policy that produced this wonderful effect; for they were poor illiterate men. It was not the agreeableness of their story to the notions and principles of mankind. This was no pleasant fable: a crucified God and Savior was to the Jews a stumbling-block, and to the Greeks foolishness. It was not the agreeableness of their doctrines to the dispositions of men; for nothing is more contrary to the corruptions of men than the pure doctrines of the Gospel. This effect, therefore, can have proceeded from no other cause than the power and agency of God; and if the power of God was thus exercised

to cause the Gospel to prevail, then the Gospel is his word; for surely God does not use his almighty power to promote a mere imposture and delusion.

4. This success is agreeable to what Christ and his apostles foretold. Matt. 16:18. "Upon this rock will I build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." John, 12:24. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit." And ver. 31, 32. "Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me." John, 16:8. "When he (the Comforter) is come, he will reprove the world of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment—because the prince of this world is judged."

So the apostle Paul, 1 Cor. 1:21-28, declares, that after "the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God, by the foolishness of preaching, to save them that believe;" and that God chose "the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; and base things of the world, and things which are despised, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are."—If any man foretells a thing, very likely in itself to come to pass, from causes which can be foreseen, it is no great argument of a revelation from God: but when a thing is foretold which is entirely contrary to the common course of things, and yet comes to pass just agreeable to the prediction, this is a strong argument that the prediction is from God. Thus the consideration of the *manner* of the propa-



gation and success of the Gospel during the time which has been spoken of, affords great evidence that the Scriptures are the word of God.

---

## CHAPTER III.

### FROM THE TIME OF CONSTANTINE TO THE RISE OF ANTICHRIST.

I am now to show the success of Christ's redemption from the overthrow of the Heathen Roman empire, in the time of Constantine the Great, till the rise of Antichrist. And in order to a more clear view of the great works of God in it, and our seeing the glory of them, it will be necessary, as in the foregoing periods, to consider not only the success itself, but the opposition made to it.

I. The *opposition*. Satan, the great red dragon, after so sore a conflict with Michael and his angels for the greater part of three hundred years, was at last entirely routed and vanquished; so that he was cast down, as it were, from heaven to earth. Yet he does not give over his opposition to the woman, the church of Christ, concerning which all this conflict had been; but is still in a rage, renews his attempts, and has recourse to new devices against the church. The serpent, after he is cast out of heaven to the earth, casts out of his mouth water as a flood, to cause the woman to be carried away of

the flood. The opposition he made to the church of Christ, before the rise of Antichrist, was principally of two kinds. It was either by corrupting the church of Christ with heresies, or by new endeavors to restore Paganism.

1. After the destruction of the Heathen Roman empire, Satan infested the church with *heresies*. Though there had been so glorious a work of God in delivering the church from her Heathen persecutors, and overthrowing the Heathen empire; yet the days of the church's travail not being ended, and the set time of her prosperity (which was to succeed the fall of Antichrist) not being yet come, the peace and prosperity which the church enjoyed in Constantine's time was but very short. It was a respite, which gave the church a time of peace and silence, as it were, *for half an hour*, wherein the four angels held the four winds from blowing, till the servants of God should be sealed in their foreheads. But the church soon began to be greatly infested with heresies; the two principal, and most injurious of which were the Arian and Pelagian.

The *Arians* began soon after Constantine came to the throne. They denied the doctrine of the Trinity, and the divinity of Christ and the Holy Ghost, maintaining that they were but mere creatures. This heresy increased more and more in the church, and prevailed like a flood which threatened to overthrow all, and entirely to carry away the church, insomuch that before the close of the fourth century, the greater part of the christian church were become Arians. Some emperors, the successors of Constantine, were Arians; so that being the prevailing party, and having the civil authority on their side, they raised a

great persecution against the true church of Christ ; so that this heresy might well be compared to a flood out of the mouth of a serpent, which threatened to overthrow all, and quite carry away the woman.

The *Pelagian* heresy arose in the beginning of the next century. It began with one PELAGIUS, who was born in Britain: his British name was MORGAN. He denied original sin and the influence of the Spirit of God in conversion, and held the power of free will, and many other things of like tendency ; and this heresy for a while greatly infested the church. Pelagius' principal antagonist, who wrote in defence of the orthodox faith, was St Augustine.

2. The other kind of opposition which Satan made against the church, was in his endeavors to restore *Paganism*. His first attempt was by Julian the Apostate. Julian was nephew to Constantine the Great. When Constantine died, he left his empire to three sons ; and after their death, Julian the Apostate reigned in their stead. He had been a professed Christian, but he fell from Christianity, and turned Pagan ; and therefore is called *the apostate*. When he came to the throne, he used his utmost endeavors to overthrow the christian church, and set up Paganism again in the empire. He put down the christian magistrates, and set up Heathens in their room. He rebuilt the heathen temples, set up the heathen worship, and became a most notorious persecutor of the Christians. He used to call Christ, by way of reproach, *the Galilean*. He was killed by a lance in his wars with the Persians. When he saw that he was mortally wounded, he took a handful of his blood and threw it up towards hea-

ven, crying out, "Thou hast overcome, O Galilean." He is commonly thought by divines to have committed the unpardonable sin.

Another way that Satan attempted to restore Paganism in the Roman empire, was by *the invasions and conquests of heathen nations*. For in this space of time the Goths and Vandals, and other barbarous nations from the north, invaded the empire, and obtained great conquests. They even overran the empire, and in the fifth century took the city of Rome, and finally conquered and took possession of the western half of the empire, and divided it among them. It was divided into ten kingdoms, with which began the ten horns of the beast; for we are told, that the ten horns are ten kings, who should rise in the latter part of the Roman empire: these are also represented by the ten toes of Nebuchadnezzar's image. The invasion and conquests of these heathen nations are supposed to be foretold in the 8th chapter of Revelation, in what came to pass under the sounding of the four first trumpets. Now by their means Heathenism was again for a while restored after it had been rooted out.

II. I proceed to show what *success* the Gospel had in this space, notwithstanding this opposition.

1. I would observe that the opposition of Satan in those things was baffled. Though the dragon cast out of his mouth such a flood after the woman to carry her away, yet he could not obtain his design; but the earth helped the woman, and opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. These heresies, which for a time so much prevailed, after a while dwindled away, and orthodoxy was again restored.

2. The Gospel, during this space of time, was further propagated among many barbarous heathen nations in the confines of the Roman empire. In the time of Constantine there was a considerable propagation of the Gospel in the East Indies, chiefly by the ministry of one Frumentius. Great numbers of the Iberians were converted to Christianity by a christian woman of eminent piety whom they had taken captive. And some account is given of several other barbarous nations who were not within the Roman empire, that great numbers of them were brought to receive the Gospel by the teaching and example of captives whom they had taken in war. About the year of Christ 372, the Gospel was propagated among the barbarous inhabitants of Arabia; and among some of the northern nations; particularly a prince of the Goths about this time became Christian, and a great number of his people with him. Towards the latter part of this century, the Gospel was also further propagated among the Persians; and among the Scythians, a barbarous people, whom the apostle mentions. Col. 3 : 11. "Barbarian, Scythian," &c.

And after this, about the year 430, was a remarkable conversion of the *Burgundians* to the christian faith. Now the Gospel began to be propagated in Ireland; and the Irish, who till now had been Heathen, began to receive the christian faith. About the same time it was further propagated among some barbarous people in Scotland, and in some other places. In the next century, *Zathus*, a Heathen king, who ruled over the *Colchians*, was brought to renounce his Heathenism, and to embrace the christian religion. Several other barbarous nations

are recorded to have renounced Heathenism and embraced Christianity about this time, that I cannot now mention.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### FROM THE RISE OF ANTICHRIST TO THE REFORMATION.

I come now to the darkest and most dismal day the christian church ever saw, and probably the darkest that ever it will see—from the rise of Antichrist till the Reformation by Luther and others. The true church in this space was for many hundred years in a state of great obscurity: like the woman in the wilderness, she was almost hid from sight and observation. In speaking of the events of this space of time, I would notice, 1. The great machinations and works of Satan against the kingdom of Christ; 2. How the church of Christ was upheld.

1. The great machinations and works of Satan against the kingdom of Christ during this time. Satan had done great things against the christian church before, but had been baffled once and again. Michael and his angels had obtained a glorious victory. How terrible was his opposition during the continuance of the Heathen empire; and how glorious was Christ's victory and triumph over him in the time of Constantine! It pleased God now to prepare the way for a yet more glorious victory over

him; he is suffered to renew his strength, and to do the utmost that his power and subtilty can effect. He has a long time to lay his schemes, to establish his interest, and make his matters strong. God suffers him to carry his designs a great length indeed, almost to the swallowing up of his church; and to exercise a high, proud, and almost uncontrolled dominion in the world a long time, before Christ finally conquers, and utterly ruins his visible kingdom. This he will do in the time of the destruction of Antichrist: thus gloriously triumphing over Satan, after he has done to the utmost of his power and subtilty; after he has lifted himself highest of all, and dealt most proudly.

The two great works of the devil, in this space of time, against the kingdom of Christ, are his creating his *Antichristian* and *Mohammedan* kingdoms; which both together comprehend the ancient Roman empire; the kingdom of Antichrist the western, and the Mohammedan kingdom the eastern empire. As the Scriptures in the book of Revelation represent it, it is in the destruction of these that the glorious victory of Christ, at the introduction of the glorious times of the church, will mainly consist. And here let us briefly observe how Satan erects and maintains these two great kingdoms of his in opposition to the kingdom of Christ.

1. With respect to the kingdom of *Antichrist*. This seems to be the masterpiece of all the contrivances of the devil against the kingdom of Christ, and is evidently so spoken of in Scripture. Antichrist is *that* man of sin, 2 Thess. 2 : 3, emphatically, as though he were so eminently. He is called *Antichrist*, which signifies the opponent or adver-

sary of Christ, not because he is the *only* opponent of Christ; for the apostle John observes, that in his days there were *many* Antichrists; but this is called *the Antichrist*, as though there were none but he, because he was so eminently, and above all others. So this contrivance of the devil is called *the mystery of iniquity*. 2 Thess. 2: 7. We find no enemy of Christ one half so much spoken of in the prophecies of Revelation as this; and the destruction of no enemy is spoken of as so glorious, and so happy for the church.

This is a contrivance to turn the ministry of the christian church into a ministry of the devil, and the angels of the churches into fallen angels. In the tyranny, superstition, idolatry, and persecution, which he sets up, he contrives to make an image of ancient Paganism, and more than to restore what was lost by the overthrow of Paganism in the time of Constantine. By these means, the head of the beast, which was wounded unto death in Constantine, has his deadly wound healed in Antichrist. Rev. 13: 3. And the dragon, that formerly reigned in the Heathen Roman empire, being cast out thence, after the beast with seven heads and ten horns rises up out of the sea, gives him his power, and seat, and great authority; and all the world wonders after the beast.

I am far from pretending to determine the time when the reign of Antichrist began, which is a point that has been so much controverted among divines and expositors. It is certain that the twelve hundred and sixty days, or years, which are so often in Scripture mentioned as the time of the continuance of Antichrist's reign, did not commence before the year of Christ four hundred and seventy-nine; because if they did, they would have ended, and Anti-



christ would have fallen before now, (A. D. 1739.) The rise of Antichrist was gradual. The christian church corrupted itself in many things presently after Constantine's time; growing more and more superstitious in its worship, and by degrees bringing in many ceremonies into the worship of God, till at length they brought in the worship of saints, and set up images in their churches. The clergy in general, and especially the bishop of Rome, assumed more and more authority. \* \* \* At length he claimed the power of universal bishop over the whole christian church; wherein he was opposed for a while, but afterwards was *confirmed in it by the civil power of the Emperor, in the year six hundred and six*. After that he claimed the power of a temporal prince, and so was wont to carry two swords, to signify that both the temporal and spiritual sword was his. He claimed more and more authority, till at length, as Christ's vicegerent on earth, he claimed the very same power that Christ would have done, if he was present on earth, reigning on his throne; or the same power that belongs to God, and was used to be called *God on earth*; to be submitted to by all the princes of Christendom. He claimed power to crown princes, and to degrade them at his pleasure; and this power was owned—yea, kings and emperors used to kiss his feet. The emperors received their crowns at his hands; and princes were wont to dread the displeasure of the Pope as they would dread a thunderbolt from heaven. If the Pope was pleased to excommunicate a prince, all his subjects were at once freed from their allegiance to him; and

obliged not to own him any more, on pain of excommunication : and not only so, but any man might kill him wherever he found him. Further, the Pope was believed to have power to damn men at pleasure ; for whoever died under his excommunication, was looked upon as certainly damned. Several emperors were actually deposed, and ejected, and died miserably by his means ; and if the people of any state or kingdom did not please him, he had power to lay that state or kingdom under an interdict, which was a sentence pronounced by the Pope against it, whereby all sacred administrations among them could have no validity. There could be no valid baptisms, or sacraments, or prayers, or preaching, or pardons, till that interdict was taken off ; so that that people remained, in their apprehension, in a miserable, damnable state, and therefore dreaded the Pope's interdict as they would a storm of fire and brimstone from heaven. And in order to execute his wrath on a prince or people with whom he was displeased, other princes must also be put to a great deal of trouble and expense.

And as the Pope and his clergy robbed the people of their ecclesiastical and civil liberties and privileges, so they also robbed them of their estates, and drained all Christendom of their money. They engrossed most of their riches into their own coffers, by vast revenues, besides pay for pardons and indulgences, baptisms and extreme unctions, deliverance out of purgatory, and a hundred other things.— See how well this agrees with the prophecies, 2 Thess. 2 : 3, 4. Dan. 7 : 20, 21. Rev. 13 : 6, 7 ; and chap. 17 : 3, 4.

During this time also superstition and ignorance

more and more prevailed. The holy Scriptures by degrees were taken out of the hands of the laity, the better to promote the unscriptural and wicked designs of the Pope and the clergy; and instead of promoting knowledge among the people, they industriously promoted ignorance. It was a received maxim among them, That ignorance is the mother of devotion: and so great was the darkness of those times, that learning was almost extinct in the world. The very priests themselves, most of them, were barbarously ignorant as to any commendable learning, or any other knowledge than their hellish craft in oppressing and tyrannizing over the souls of the people. The superstition and wickedness of the church of Rome, grew worse and worse till the very time of the Reformation, and the whole Christian world were led away into this great defection, except the remains of the christian church in the Eastern Empire that had not been utterly overthrown by the Turks. The Greek church, and some others, were also sunk into great darkness and gross superstition, excepting also those few that were the people of God, who are represented by the woman in the wilderness, and God's two witnesses, of which more hereafter.—This is one of those two great kingdoms which the devil in this period erected in opposition to the kingdom of Christ, and was the greatest and chief.

2. The *Mohammedan* kingdom is another of mighty power and vast extent, set up by Satan against the kingdom of Christ. He set this up in the Eastern empire, as he did that of Antichrist in the Western.

Mohammed was born in the year of Christ 570,

in Arabia. When he was about forty years of age he began to announce that he was the great prophet of God; and proceeded to teach his new-invented religion, of which he was to be worshiped as the head next under God. He published his Alcoran, which he pretended he received from the angel Gabriel; and being a subtle crafty man, possessed of considerable wealth, and living among a people who were very ignorant and greatly divided in their opinions on religious matters, he, by subtilty and fair promises of a sensual paradise, gained a number to be his followers. He set himself up as their prince, propagated his religion by the sword, and made it meritorious of paradise to fight for him. By such means his party grew, and went on fighting till they conquered and brought over the neighboring countries; and so his party gradually increased till they overran a great part of the world. First the Saracens were some of his followers, who were a people of Arabia, where Mohammed lived, and who, about the year 700, dreadfully wasted the Roman empire. They overran a great many countries belonging to the empire, and continued their conquests for a long time. These are supposed to be meant by the locusts mentioned in the 9th chapter of Revelation.

And then the Turks, who were originally different from the Saracens, became followers of Mohammed, and conquered all the Eastern empire. They began their empire about the year of Christ 1296; began to invade Europe in the year 1300; took Constantinople, and so became masters of all the Eastern empire, in the year 1453. And thus all the cities and countries where stood those fa-

mous churches of which we read in the New Testament, as Jerusalem, Antioch, Ephesus, Corinth, &c. now became subject to the 'Turks. These are supposed to be prophesied of by the horsemen in Rev. 9:15, &c. And the remains of the Christians in those parts of the world, who are mostly of the Greek church, are in miserable slavery under these Turks; are treated with a great deal of barbarity and cruelty, and are become mostly very ignorant and superstitious.

Thus I have shown what great works of Satan were wrought during this space of time in opposition to the kingdom of Christ.

II. I come now to show how the church of Christ was upheld through this dark time.

1. It is to be observed, that towards the former part of this space of time, some of the nations of Christendom held out a long time before they complied with the corruptions and usurpations of the church of Rome. Though all the world wondered after the beast, yet all nations did not fall in at once. Many of the principal corruptions of the church of Rome were brought in with a great deal of struggle and opposition; and particularly when the Pope gave out that he was universal bishop, many churches greatly opposed him in it; and it was a long time before they would yield to his exorbitant claims. When the worship of images was first brought into the churches there were many who greatly opposed it, and long held out against it. And so with respect to other corruptions of the church of Rome. Those who dwelt nearer to the city of Rome complied sooner; but some that were more remote were a long time before they could be

induced to put their necks under the yoke: and particularly a great part of the churches in England, Scotland, and France retained the ancient purity of doctrine and worship much longer than many others who were nearer the chief seat of Antichrist.

2. In every age of this dark time there appeared particular persons in all parts of Christendom, who bore a testimony against the corruptions and tyranny of the church of Rome. There is no age of Antichrist, even in the darkest times, but ecclesiastical historians mention many by name who manifested an abhorrence of the Pope and his idolatrous worship, and pleaded for the ancient purity of doctrine and worship. God was pleased to maintain an uninterrupted succession of many witnesses through the whole time, in Germany, France, Britain, and other countries; private persons and ministers, some magistrates and persons of great distinction. And there were numbers in every age who were persecuted and put to death for this testimony.

3. Besides these various individuals, there was a people called the *Waldenses*, who lived separate from all the rest of the world, and constantly bore a testimony against the church of Rome through all this dark time. The place where they dwelt was the *Vaudois*, or the five valleys of *Piedmont*, a very mountainous country between Italy and France; it was compassed about with those exceeding high mountains *the Alps*, which were almost impassable, and therefore the valleys were almost inaccessible. There this people lived for many ages, in a state of separation from all the world, having very little to do with any other people. And there they served God in the

ancient purity of his worship, and never submitted to the church of Rome. This probably was the place especially meant, Rev. 12 : 6, as prepared of God for the woman, that they should feed her there during the reign of Antichrist.

Some of the popish writers themselves own that this people never submitted to the church of Rome. One of the popish writers, speaking of the Waldenses, says, the heresy of the Waldenses is the oldest heresy in the world. It is supposed that they first betook themselves to this place among the mountains, to hide themselves from the severity of the Heathen persecutions which existed before Constantine the Great. And thus the woman fled into the wilderness from the face of the serpent. Rev. 12 : 6, 14. "And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place : where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent." The people being settled there, their posterity continued there from age to age : and being, as it were, by natural walls, as well as by God's grace, separated from the rest of the world, they never partook of the overflowing corruption.

These especially were those virgins who were not defiled, when other churches prostituted themselves ; but they kept themselves pure for Christ alone. They followed the Lamb, their spiritual husband, whithersoever he went : they followed him into this hideous wilderness. Rev. 14 : 4, 5. Their doctrine and worship appear to be the same with the protestant doctrine and worship ; and by the confession of popish writers, they were a people remarkable for the strictness of their lives, for charity

and other christian virtues. They lived in external poverty in this hideous country ; but they chose this rather than comply with the great corruptions of the rest of the world.

Living in so secret a place, it was a long time before they were noticed. But at last, falling under observation, the Romanists went out in mighty armies against them, fell upon them with insatiable cruelty, barbarously massacreing and putting to death men, women, and children, with all imaginable tortures. Their enemies continued persecuting them with but little intermission for several hundred years ; by which means many were driven out of the valleys of Piedmont. These fled into all parts of Europe, carrying with them their doctrine, to which many were brought over. Their persecutors could not by all their cruelties extirpate the church of God ; so fulfilling his word, that "the gates of hell should not prevail against it."

4. Towards the latter part of this dark time several noted divines openly appeared to defend the truth, and bear testimony against the corruptions of the church of Rome. The first and principal of these was *John Wickliff*, an English divine, who appeared about one hundred and forty years before the Reformation ; he strenuously opposed the popish religion, taught the same doctrine that the Reformers afterwards did, and had many followers in England. He was hotly persecuted in his lifetime, yet died in peace ; but after he was buried, his bones were dug up by his persecutors and burnt. His followers remained in considerable numbers in England till the Reformation : they were cruelly persecuted, and multitudes were put to death for their religion.



Wickliff had many disciples, not only in England, but in other parts of Europe, whither his books were carried; and particularly in Bohemia, among whom were two eminent divines, *John Huss* and *Jerome*, a divine of Prague, the chief city of Bohemia. These strenuously opposed the church of Rome, and had many who adhered to them. They were both burnt by the Papists for their doctrine; and their followers in Bohemia were cruelly persecuted, but never extirpated till the Reformation.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### FROM THE REFORMATION TO THE PRESENT TIME.

Thus having gone through the dark time of the church, I come now to consider that part which begins with the Reformation, and reaches to the present time. And here I would notice, 1. The Reformation itself; 2. The opposition which the devil has made to the reformed church; 3. The recent success of the Gospel in one place and another; 4. What the state of things is now in the world with regard to the church of Christ, and the success of his purchase.

I. *The Reformation itself.* This was begun in Germany, about the year 1515, by the preaching of *Martin Luther*, who being stirred in his spirit to see the horrid practices of the popish clergy, and having set himself diligently to inquire after truth

by the study of the holy Scriptures, and the writings of the ancient fathers of the church, very openly and boldly decried the corruptions and usurpations of the Romish church in his preaching and writings. He had soon a great number who agreed with him; among whom was the Elector of Saxony, the sovereign prince of the country to which he belonged. This greatly alarmed the church of Rome, which rallied all its force to oppose him and his doctrine, and raised fierce wars and persecutions against him. But yet the truth spread by means of the labors of *Luther* and *Melancthon* in Germany, *Zuinglius* in Switzerland, and other eminent divines, who were cotemporary with Luther, particularly *Calvin*, who appeared after the beginning of the Reformation, but was one of the most eminent Reformers.

Many of the princes of Germany soon received the reformed religion, and many other states and kingdoms in Europe, as England, Scotland, Sweden, Denmark, Norway, great part of France, Poland, Lithuania, Switzerland, and the Low Countries. So that it is thought that at one time about half Christendom were of the Protestant religion; though since, the Papists have gained ground: so that the Protestants now have not so great a proportion.

Thus God began gloriously to revive his church again, and advance the kingdom of his Son, after such a dismal night of darkness from the rise of Antichrist to that time. There had been many endeavors used by the witnesses for the truth for a reformation before. But now when God's appointed time was come, his work went on with a swift and

wonderful progress; and Antichrist, who had been rising higher and higher from his beginning till that time, was swiftly and suddenly brought down; he fell half-way towards utter ruin, and never has been able to rise again to his former height. A late expositor (Mr. LOWMAN) who explains the five first vials in the 16th chapter of Revelation with greater probability perhaps than any who went before him, explains the fifth vial, which was poured out on the seat of the beast, of what came to pass in the Reformation; having explained the four preceding vials of certain great judgments which God brought on the popish dominions before the Reformation. It is said, Rev. 16 : 10, that "the fifth angel poured out his vial on the seat of the beast;" in the original, it is *the throne of the beast*; "and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain, and blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds." He poured out his vial upon the throne of the beast, that is, on the authority and dominion of the Pope: so the word throne is often used in Scripture. 1 Kings, 1 : 37. "As the Lord hath been with my lord the king, even so be he with Solomon, and make his throne greater than the throne of my lord king David;" *i. e.* make his dominion and authority greater, and his kingdom more glorious.

But now, in the Reformation, the vials of God's wrath were poured out on the throne of the beast, till it was terribly shaken and diminished. The Pope's authority and dominion were so greatly reduced, both as to extent and degree, that he lost about half his dominions; besides that authority

even in Popish dominions, which he had before. He is not now regarded, nor is his power dreaded as it was wont to be. The powers of Europe have learned not to put their necks under the Pope's feet. He is as a lion that has lost his teeth, in comparison of what he once was. And when the Pope and his clergy, enraged to see their authority so diminished at the Reformation, united their plans, and joined their forces to destroy the Reformation; their policy, which was wont to serve them so well, failed. They found their kingdom full of darkness, so that they could do nothing; like the Egyptians, who rose not from their seats for three days. The Reformed church was defended, as Lot and the angels were in Sodom, by God's smiting the Sodomites with darkness or blindness, so that they could not find the door. God then fulfilled that in Job, 5 : 11, &c. "To set up on high those that be low, that those which mourn may be exalted to safety. He disappointeth the devices of the crafty, so that their hands cannot perform their enterprise. He taketh the wise in their own craftiness; and the counsel of the froward is carried headlong. They meet with darkness in the day-time, and grope in the noon-day as in the night. But he saveth the poor from the sword, from their mouth, and from the hand of the mighty." Those proud enemies of God's people being so disappointed, and finding themselves so unable to uphold their own dominion and authority, were made as it were to gnaw their tongues for pain, or to bite them for mere rage.

II. I proceed to show what *opposition* has been made by Satan and his adherents, to this success of Christ's purchase by the Reformation; observing

as we go along, how far they have been baffled, and how far they have been successful.

The opposition which Satan has made against the Reformed religion has been principally of the following kinds: 1. By a general council of the church of Rome; 2. By secret plots and devices; 3. By open wars and invasions; 4. By cruel oppression and persecution; and, 5. By bringing in corrupt opinions.

I. The first opposition that I shall notice is that made by the clergy of the church of Rome in a *general council*. This was the famous council of *Trent*, which the Pope called a little while after the Reformation. In that council there met six cardinals, thirty-two archbishops, two hundred and twenty-eight bishops, besides innumerable others of the Romish clergy. This council, in all their sittings, including the times of intermission, was held for twenty-five years. Their main business all this while was to concert measures for establishing the church of Rome against the Reformers, and for destroying the Reformation. But it proved that they were not able to perform their enterprise. The reformed church, notwithstanding their great council, remained, and still remains. So that the council of the froward is carried headlong; their kingdom is full of darkness, and they weary themselves to find the door.

Thus the church of Rome, instead of repenting of their deeds, when such clear light was held forth to them by Luther and other servants of God, persisted, by general agreement in council, in their vile corruptions and wickedness, and obstinate opposition to the kingdom of Christ. The doctrines and

practices of the church of Rome, which were chiefly condemned by the Reformed, were confirmed by the decrees of their council; and the corruptions, in many respects, were carried higher than ever before. They uttered blasphemous reproaches and curses against the reformed religion, and all the reformed church was excommunicated and anathematized. According to the prophecy, *they blasphemed God*. Thus God hardened their hearts, intending to destroy them.

2. The Papists have endeavored to overthrow the Reformation by *secret plots* and conspiracies. There were many plots against the life of Luther. The Papists were contriving to dispatch him out of their way; and he, being a very bold man, often very much exposed himself in the cause of Christ; but yet they were wonderfully prevented from hurting him, and he at last died in his bed in peace. There have been innumerable schemes secretly laid for the overthrow of the protestant religion; one of the most considerable, and which seemed to be the most likely to take effect, was that in the time of king James II. of England. There was at that time a strong conspiracy between the king of England and Louis XIV. of France, who were both Papists, to extirpate the northern heresy, as they called the protestant religion, not only out of England, but out of all Europe; and they had so laid their schemes that they seemed to be almost sure of their purpose. They thought that if the reformed religion were suppressed in the British realms and in the Netherlands, which were the strongest part, and chief defence of the protestant interest, they should have easy work with the rest. And just as

their matters seemed to be come to a head, and their enterprise ripe for execution, God, in his providence, suddenly dashed all their schemes in pieces by the revolution, at the coming in of king William and queen Mary; by which all their designs were at an end. Now the protestant interest was more strongly established, by the crown of England being transferred to the protestant house of Hanover, and a Papist being, by the constitution of the nation, for ever rendered incapable of wearing the crown of England. Thus they groped in darkness at noonday as in the night, and their hands could not perform their enterprise, and their kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain.

After this there was a deep design laid to bring the same thing to pass in the latter end of Queen Anne's reign, by the bringing in of the popish pretender; which was no less suddenly and totally baffled by divine Providence; as all the plots against the Reformation by bringing in the pretender have been.

3. The Reformation has often been opposed by *open wars* and invasions. The emperor of Germany declared war with the duke of Saxony, and the principal men who favored and received Luther's doctrine. But they could not obtain their end; they could not suppress the Reformation. For the same end, some time after, the king of Spain maintained a long war with Holland and the Low Countries. But those cruel wars issued greatly to the disadvantage of the Romish church, as they occasioned the setting up of one of the most powerful protestant states in Europe. The design of the

Spanish invasion of England in queen Elizabeth's time, was to suppress and root out the reformed religion; and therefore they brought in their fleet all manner of instruments of cruelty wherewith to torture the protestants who would not renounce the protestant religion. But their design was totally baffled, and their mighty fleet in a great measure ruined.

4. Satan has opposed the Reformation with *cruel persecutions*. The persecutions with which the protestants have been harassed by the church of Rome, have in many respects been far beyond any of the Heathen persecutions. So that Antichrist has proved the greatest and most cruel enemy to the church of Christ that ever was in the world, in this as well as in all other respects; agreeable to the description given of the church of Rome, Rev. 17: "And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus." And 18: 24; "And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all them that were slain upon the earth."

The Heathen persecutions had been very dreadful; but now persecution by the church of Rome was improved, and studied, and cultivated, as an art or science. Such ways of afflicting and tormenting were found out, as are beyond the invention of ordinary men, or men unstudied in those things, and beyond the invention of all former ages. And that persecution might be managed the more effectually, there were certain societies of men established in various parts of the popish dominions, whose business it should be to study, and improve, and practice persecution in its highest perfection, namely, *the courts of inquisition*. The particular histories



of the Romish persecution, and their courts of inquisition, will give an idea of their cruelties, which a few words cannot express.

When the Reformation commenced, the beast with seven heads and ten horns began to rage in a dreadful manner. The church of Rome renewed its persecution of the poor Waldenses, and great multitudes of them were cruelly tortured and put to death. Soon after the Reformation there were terrible persecutions in various parts of Germany; and especially in Bohemia, which lasted for thirty years; in which so much blood was shed for the sake of religion, that a certain writer compares it to the plenty of waters of the great rivers of Germany. The countries of Poland, Lithuania, and Hungary, were in like manner deluged with protestant blood.

By means of these and other cruel persecutions, the protestant religion was in a great measure suppressed in Bohemia, the Palatinate, and Hungary, which before were protestant countries. Thus was fulfilled what was foretold of the little horn, Dan. 7 : 20, 21. "— and of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell, even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows. I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them." And what was foretold of the beast having seven heads and ten horns, Rev, 13 : 7. "And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations."

Holland and the other Low Countries were for many years a scene of nothing but the most affecting and amazing cruelties, being deluged with the blood of protestants, under the merciless hands of the Spaniards, to whom they were then in subjection. But in this persecution the devil in a great measure failed of his purpose, as it issued in a great part of the Netherlands casting off the Spanish yoke, and setting up a wealthy and powerful protestant state, to the great defence of the protestant cause ever since.

France also is another country, which, since the Reformation, in some respects, perhaps more than any other, has been a scene of dreadful cruelties suffered by the protestants. After many cruelties had been exercised toward the protestants in that kingdom, there was begun a persecution of them in the year 1571, in the reign of Charles IX. king of France. It began with a cruel massacre, wherein *seventy thousand protestants were slain in a few days*, as the king boasted; and in all this persecution he slew, as is supposed, three hundred thousand martyrs. And it is reckoned that about this time, within thirty years, there were martyred in this kingdom, for the protestant religion, *thirty-nine princes, one hundred and forty-eight counts, two hundred and thirty-four barons, one hundred and forty-seven thousand five hundred and eighteen gentlemen, and seven hundred and sixty thousand common people.*

But all these persecutions were, for exquisite cruelty, far exceeded by those which followed in the reign of Louis XIV. which indeed are supposed to exceed all others; and being long continued, by

the long reign of that king, they almost wholly extirpated the protestant religion from that kingdom, where had flourished a multitude of protestant churches. Thus it was given to the beast to make war with the saints, and to overcome them.

There was also a terrible persecution in England in queen Mary's time, wherein great numbers in all parts of the kingdom were burnt alive. And after this, though the protestant religion was for the most part established by law, yet there were very severe persecutions by high-churchmen, who symbolized in many things with the Papists. Such was that which occasioned our forefathers to flee from their native country, and come and settle in this land, then a howling wilderness. And these persecutions were continued with little intermission till king William came to the throne.

Scotland was also the scene for many years of cruelties and blood by the hands of the high-churchmen, such as came very little short of the popish persecution in queen Mary's days, and in many things much exceeded it, which continued till they were delivered by king William.

Ireland also was, as it were, overwhelmed with protestant blood. In the days of king Charles I. of England, above *two hundred thousand protestants* were cruelly murdered in that kingdom in a few days; the papists, by a secret agreement, rising at an appointed time, intending to kill every protestant in the kingdom at once.

Besides these, there have been very cruel persecutions in Italy and Spain, and other places, which I cannot now relate.—Thus did the devil, and his

great minister Antichrist, rage with such violence and cruelty against the church of Christ ! and thus did the whore of Babylon make herself drunk with the blood of the saints and martyrs of Jesus ! By these persecutions the protestant church has been much diminished ! Yet have they not been able to prevail ; but still the protestant church is upheld, and Christ fulfils his promise, that *the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.*

5. The last kind of opposition that Satan has made to the Reformation is by *corrupt opinions*. The first opposition of this kind was by the followers of Münster and other fanatics who arose in Germany about four or five years after the beginning of the Reformation.\*\* They were very wild and extravagant, and held many exceedingly corrupt opinions. One tenet of theirs was, That there ought to be no civil authority, and that it was lawful to rebel against it. And on this principle they refused to submit to magistrates or any human laws ; and gathered together in vast armies, to defend themselves against their civil rulers, and put all Germany into an uproar, and so kept it for some time.

The next opposition of this kind to the Reformation was that which was made by *enthusiasts*. Those are called enthusiasts who falsely pretend to be inspired by the Holy Ghost, as the prophets were. These began in Germany about ten years after Luther began the Reformation ; and there arose various sects of them, who were exceeding wild and extravagant.\*\*

The next of these were the *Socinians*, who had their beginning chiefly in Poland, by the teaching

of *Lælius Socinus* and *Faustus Socinus*. They held that Christ was a mere man, and denied Christ's satisfaction and most of the fundamental doctrines of the christian religion. Their heresy has since been greatly propagated among Protestants in Poland, Germany, Holland, England, and other places.\*\*\*

Since this, *Arianism* has been revived, an error that, a little after Constantine's time, almost swallowed up the christian world, like a flood out of the mouth of the serpent which threatened to swallow up the woman. Of late years this heresy has been extensively spread. Its advocates hold that Christ is but a mere creature, though they grant that he is the greatest of all creatures.

Another thing which has of late exceedingly prevailed among Protestants, and especially in England, is Deism. The Deists wholly cast off the christian religion, and are professed infidels. Indeed they own the being of God, but deny any revealed religion, or any word of God at all; and say that God has given mankind no other light to walk by but their own reason.

III. I proceed now to show what *success* the Gospel has had in these latter times of the reformed church; including, 1. Reformation in doctrine and worship in countries called Christian; 2. Propagation of the Gospel among the Heathen; 3. Revival of religion in the power and practice of it.

1. As to reformation in *doctrine*, the most considerable success of late has been in the empire of Russia, a country of vast extent. So many of the people as called themselves Christians, professed to be of the Greek church; but were very ignorant and superstitious. Their late emperor, Peter the

Great, set himself to reform his dominions, took great pains to bring them out of their darkness, and to have them instructed in religion. To that end he set up schools of learning, ordered the Bible to be printed in the language of the country, made a law that every family should have the holy Scriptures, and that no one should marry until able to read them. He also reformed the churches of many of their superstitions, whereby the religion professed and practiced is much nearer than it was to that of the Protestants. This emperor gave great encouragement to the exercise of the protestant religion in his dominions. And since that, Russia has become a land of light, in comparison of what it was fifty years since.

2. As to the *propagation of the Gospel among the Heathen*, I would notice three things.

(1.) Its propagation here in *America*. This vast continent was wholly unknown to all Christian nations till these latter times. It was not known that there was any such part of the world, though it was very full of people; and therefore the devil had this part of the world, as it were, secure to himself, out of the reach of the light of the Gospel, and so out of the way of molestation in his dominion over them. Here the many nations of Indians worshiped him as God from age to age, while the Gospel was confined to the opposite side of the globe. It has been supposed that the devil, being alarmed and surprised by the wonderful success of the Gospel the first three hundred years after Christ, and by the downfall of the Heathen empire in the time of Constantine—seeing the Gospel spread so fast, and fearing that his heathenish kingdom would be wholly over-

thrown through the world—led away a people from the other continent into America, that they might be quite out of the reach of the Gospel, that here he might quietly possess them, and reign over them as their god.—Many writers intimate, that some of the Indian nations, when the Europeans first came into America, had a tradition among them that their god first led them into this continent, and went before them in an ark.

However, it is certain that the devil here quietly enjoyed his dominion over the poor Indians for many ages. But in later times, God has sent the Gospel into these parts, and now the christian church exists here in America, where before had been nothing but the grossest heathenish darkness. Great part of the land is now full of Bibles, and at least the *form* of the worship of the true God and Jesus Christ, where the name of Christ before had not been heard. And though there has been but a small propagation of the Gospel among the Heathen here, in comparison of what were to be desired, yet there has been something worthy of notice. Many Indians, both at first and of late, have exhibited a remarkable inclination to be instructed in the Christian religion.

However small the propagation of the Gospel among the Heathen here in America has been hitherto, yet I think we may well look upon the discovery of so great a part of the world, and bringing the Gospel into it, as one thing by which divine Providence is preparing the way for the future glorious times of the church, when Satan's kingdom shall be overthrown throughout the whole habitable globe, on every side, and on all its continents. When those times come, then doubtless the Gospel

shall have glorious success, and all the inhabitants of this new-discovered world shall become subjects of the kingdom of Christ, as well as all the other ends of the earth. In all probability, Providence has so ordered it, that the mariner's compass (which is an invention of later times, whereby men are enabled to sail over the widest ocean, when before they durst not venture far from land) should prove a preparation for what God intends to bring to pass in the glorious times of the church, the sending forth of the Gospel wherever any of the children of men dwell, however distant, and however separated by wide oceans from parts of the world already christianized.

(2.) There has been of late a very considerable propagation of the Gospel among the Heathen in the *Russian* empire. I have already observed the reformation among those who are called *Christians* there: but I now speak of the Heathen. The greater part of Tartary, a heathen country, has in later times been brought under the Russian government; and great numbers of late have renounced their heathenism, and embraced the christian religion.

(3.) There has lately been a very considerable propagation of the christian religion among the Heathen in the *East Indies*; particularly, many on the coast of *Malabar* have been brought over to the protestant religion, chiefly by the labors of missionaries from Denmark, who have established schools among them, and a press to print Bibles and other books for their instruction, in their own language, with great success.

3. The last kind of success which I shall notice, is the *revival* of the power and practice of religion. And here I shall mention but two instances.



(1.) There has recently been a remarkable revival of the power and practice of religion in *Germany*, through the endeavors of an eminent divine there, *Augustus Herman Frank*, professor of divinity at Halle in Saxony. Being a person of eminent charity, the great work that God wrought by him began with his placing an alms-box at his study door, into which some mites were thrown, whereby books were bought for the instruction of the poor. And God was pleased so wonderfully to smile on his design, and so to awaken a spirit of charity, that he was enabled in a little time to erect public schools for the benefit of poor children, and an orphan-house for their supply and instruction. At last, near five hundred children were maintained and instructed in learning and piety by the charity of others; and the number continued to increase more and more for many years. This was accompanied with a wonderful reformation and revival of religion, and a spirit of piety, in the city and university of Halle; which had great influence in many other places in *Germany*. Their example seemed remarkably to excite multitudes to their imitation.

(2.) Another thing which it would be ungrateful in us not to notice, is the remarkable outpouring of the Spirit of God of late in this part of *New-England*. But I will not particularly describe it. Many have been eye-witnesses of it, and I hope multitudes are sensible of the benefit.

IV. I proceed to consider the *present state* of things in the world, with regard to the church of Christ, and the success of his purchase. And this I would do by showing how things are now, compared with the first times of the Reformation. And, 1.

Wherein the state of things is altered for the worse : and, 2. How it is altered for the better.

1. The state of things is altered from what it was in the beginning of the Reformation, for the *worse* ; especially in these three respects.

(1.) The reformed church is much *diminished*. The Reformation in former times was supposed to take place through one half of Christendom, excepting the Greek church ; or that there were as many Protestants as Papists. But now it is not so ; the protestant church is much diminished. Heretofore there have been multitudes of Protestants in *France* ; many famous protestant churches were planted all over that country, who used to meet together in synods, and maintain a very regular discipline. The protestant church of France was a great part of the glory of the Reformation. But now it is far otherwise ; this church is all broken and scattered, and there are now few protestant assemblies in all that kingdom. The protestant interest is also greatly diminished in *Germany*. There were formerly several protestant sovereign princes, whose successors are now Papists ; as, particularly, the Elector Palatine, and the Elector of Saxony. The kingdom of *Bohemia* was formerly a protestant kingdom, but is now in the hands of the Papists. *Hungary* was formerly a protestant country ; but the Protestants there have been greatly reduced, and in a great measure subdued by persecutions. And the protestant interest has no way of late remarkably gained ground of the church of Rome.

(2.) Another thing is the prevailing *licentiousness* in principles and opinions. There is not now that spirit of orthodoxy which then prevailed ; there is

very little appearance of zeal for the mysterious and spiritual doctrines of Christianity; and they never were so held in contempt as they are in the present age; and especially in England, the principal kingdom of the Reformation. In this kingdom, those principles on which the power of godliness depends are in a great measure exploded.\*\*\* History gives no account of any age wherein there was so great an infidel apostasy of those who had been brought up under the light of the Gospel; never was there such a disavowal of all revealed religion; never any age wherein there was so much scoffing and ridiculing of the Gospel of Christ by those who have been brought up under its light.

(3.) There is much less prevalence of the power of *godliness* than there was at the beginning of the Reformation. A glorious out-pouring of the Spirit of God accompanied the first Reformation, not only to convert multitudes in so short a time from Popery to the true religion, but to turn many to God and true godliness. But now there is a great decay of vital piety; yea, it seems to be despised, called *enthusiasm*, and *fanaticism*. Those who are truly religious, are commonly looked upon to be beside themselves; and vice and profaneness dreadfully prevail, like a flood which threatens to bear down all before it.—But I proceed now to show,

2. In what respects things are altered for the *better* from what they were in the beginning of the Reformation.

(1.) The power and influence of the *Pope* is much diminished. Although, since the former times of the Reformation, he has gained ground in extent

of dominion, yet he has lost in degree of influence. The vial which in the beginning of the Reformation was poured out on the throne of the beast, to the great diminishing of his power and authority in the world, has continued running ever since. The Pope, soon after the Reformation, became less regarded by the princes of Europe than he had been before ; and he has been since less and less. Many of the popish princes themselves seem now to regard him very little more than they think will serve their own designs ; of which there have been several remarkable proofs and instances of late.

(2.) There is far less *persecution* now than there was in the first times of the Reformation. Some parts of the protestant church are at this day under persecution, and so probably will be till the day of the church's suffering and travail is at an end, which will not be till the fall of Antichrist. But it is not now such as it was heretofore. There does not seem to be the same *spirit* of persecution prevailing ; its virulence is abating, even among popish princes. The wickedness of the enemies of Christ, and the opposition against his cause, seem to run in another channel. The humor now is to despise and *laugh* at all religion ; and there seems to be a spirit of indifference about it. However, so far the state of things is better than it has been, that there is so much less of persecution.

3. There is a great increase of *learning*. In the dark times of Popery, before the Reformation, learning was so far decayed that the world seemed to be overrun with barbarous ignorance. The very priests were many of them grossly ignorant. Learning began to revive with the Reformation, owing

very much to the art of printing, which was invented a little before that period. Since then, learning has increased more and more, and at this day is undoubtedly raised to a vastly greater height than ever it was before : and though no good use is made of it by the greater part of learned men, yet the increase of learning in itself is to be rejoiced in, because it is a good, and, if duly applied, an excellent handmaid to religion. It is a talent which, if God gives men a heart, affords them great advantage to do much for the advancement of the kingdom of Christ and the good of the souls of men. That learning and knowledge should greatly increase before the glorious times, seems to be foretold, Dan. 12 : 4. "But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end : many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased." And however little learning is now applied to the advancement of religion, yet we may hope that the days are approaching wherein God will make great use of it for the advancement of the kingdom of Christ.

God in his providence seems now to be acting over again what he did a little before Christ came. When Christ came into the world, learning greatly prevailed ; and yet wickedness never prevailed more than then. God was pleased to suffer human learning to come to such a height before he sent forth the Gospel into the world, that the world might see the insufficiency of all their own wisdom for obtaining the knowledge of God, without the Gospel of Christ and the teaching of his Spirit. When, "in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God, by the foolishness of preach-

ing, to save them that believe." And when the Gospel came to prevail first without the help of man's wisdom, then God was pleased to make use of learning as a handmaid. So now learning is at a great height in the world, far beyond what it was in the age when Christ appeared; and the world, by their learning and wisdom, do not know God, and seem to wander in darkness and to be miserably deluded, to stumble and fall in matters of religion, as at midnight. Trusting to their learning, they grope in the day-time as in the night. Learned men are exceedingly divided in their opinions concerning religion, running into all manner of corrupt, pernicious and foolish errors. They scorn to submit their reason to divine revelation, to believe any thing that is above their comprehension; and so being wise in their own eyes, they become fools, and even vain in their imaginations; they turn the truth of God into a lie, and their foolish hearts are darkened. Rom. 1 : 21, &c.

But yet, when God has sufficiently shown men the insufficiency of human wisdom and learning, and when the appointed time comes for that glorious outpouring of the Spirit of God, when he will himself by his own immediate influence enlighten men's minds; then may we hope that God will make use of the great increase of learning as a handmaid to religion, as a means of the glorious advancement of the kingdom of his Son. Then shall human learning be subservient to the understanding of the Scriptures and to a clear explanation and a glorious defence of the doctrines of Christianity. And there is no doubt that God in his providence has of late given the world the art of printing, and

such a great increase of learning, to prepare for what he designs to accomplish for his church in the approaching days of its prosperity. Thus the wealth of the wicked is laid up for the just, Prov. 13 : 22.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### IMPROVEMENT OF PAST EVENTS.

Having now shown how the work of redemption has been carried on from the fall of man to the present time, before I proceed any further, I would make some APPLICATION.

I. From what has been said, we may see great evidence of the truth of the Christian religion, and that *the Scriptures are the word of God*. Three arguments especially may be deduced.

1. It may be argued from that violent and inveterate *opposition* there has always appeared *of the wickedness of the world* against this religion. The religion that the church of God has professed from the first, though the dispensations have changed, has always, as to its essentials, been the same. The church of God, from the beginning, has been one society. The christian church is manifestly the same society continued that was before Christ came; grafted on the same root, built on the same foundation. The revelation on which both have depended, is essentially the same: for as the christian church is built on the holy Scriptures, so was the

Jewish church. Though now the Scriptures are enlarged by the addition of the New Testament, still it is essentially the same revelation with that which was given in the Old Testament, only the subjects of divine revelation are now more clearly revealed in the New Testament than they were in the Old. The sum of both the Old Testament and New, is Christ and his redemption. The ground-work of the religion of the church of God, both before and since Christ has appeared, is the same great scheme of redemption by the Son of God. The church that was before the Israelitish church, was still substantially the same, and professed and practiced essentially the same religion. Thus it was from Noah to Abraham, and thus it was before the flood; for the church then was built on the foundation of the revelations of Christ given to Adam and Enoch. So that the church of God has always been built on those divine revelations, which have been always essentially the same, and they are summarily comprehended in the holy Scriptures. Ever since Moses' time the church has been built on the Scriptures themselves.

So that the opposition which has been made to the church of God in all ages, has always been against the same religion and the same revelation, which is a strong argument of their truth. Contraries are well argued one from another. We may well and safely argue, that a thing is good according to the degree of opposition in which it stands to evil, or the degree in which evil opposes and is hostile to it. Now it is evident by what we have seen, concerning the church of Christ and that holy religion of Jesus Christ which it has professed, that the



wickedness of the world has had a perpetual hatred to it, and made most violent opposition against it.

That the church of God has always met with great opposition in the world, none can deny. This is plain by profane history as far as that reaches; and before that, divine history testifies the same. 'The church of God, its religion and worship, began to be opposed in the time of Cain and Abel; and was so when the earth was filled with violence in Noah's time. After this, how was the church opposed in Egypt! and how was Israel always hated by the nations round about. Jer. 12 : 9. " Mine heritage is unto me as a speckled bird, the birds round about are against her." And after the Babylonish captivity, how was this church persecuted by Antiochus Epiphanes and others! How was Christ persecuted when he was on earth! and how were the apostles and other Christians persecuted by the Jews, before the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans! How violent were that people against the church! and how dreadful was the opposition of the Heathen world against the Christian church after this before Constantine! How great was their spite against the true religion! And since that, how yet more violent, and spiteful, and cruel has been the opposition of Antichrist against the church!

There is no other such instance of opposition. History gives no account of any other body of men that have been so hated, and so maliciously and insatiably pursued and persecuted, nor any thing like it. No other religion ever was so maligned age after age. The nations of other professions have enjoyed their religions in peace and quietness, however they have differed from their neighbors. One

nation has worshiped one sort of gods, and others another, without molesting or disturbing one another about it. All the spite and opposition have been against this religion of the church of Christ. All other religions have seemed to show an implacable enmity to this; and men have seemed to have, from one age to another, such a spite against it, that they have seemed as though they could never satisfy their cruelty. They put their inventions upon the rack, to find out torments that should be cruel enough; and yet, after all, never seemed to be satisfied. Their thirst has never been satisfied with blood.

That this religion, and these Scriptures, have always been malignantly opposed in the world, none will doubt. The only question that remains is, What it is that has made this opposition? Whether it be the wickedness and corruption of the world, or not, that has done this? But of this there can be no greater doubt than of the other, if we consider how causeless this cruelty has always been, who the opposers have been, and the manner in which they have opposed. The opposition has chiefly been from Heathenism and Popery; which are the fruits of the blindness, corruption, and wickedness of men, as the very Deists themselves confess. The light of nature shows that the religion of *Heathens*, consisting in the worship of idols, and sacrificing their children to them, and in obscene and abominable rites and ceremonies, is wickedness. And the superstitions, idolatries, and usurpations of the church of *Rome* are no less contrary to the light of nature. Thus it appears that this opposition to the church of God has been made

by wicked men. And with regard to the opposition of the *Jews* in Christ's and the apostles' time, it was in a most corrupt time of that nation, when the people were generally become exceedingly wicked, as some of the Jewish writers themselves, Josephus and others, who lived about that time, expressly declare. And that it has been mere wickedness that has made this opposition, is manifest from the *manner* of opposition; the extreme violence, injustice and cruelty with which the church of God has been treated. It seems to show the agency of malignant infernal spirits.

Now what reason can be assigned why the corruption and wickedness of the world should be so implacably set against this religion of Jesus Christ, and against the Scriptures, but that they are contrary to wickedness, and consequently good and holy? Why should the enemies of Christ, for so many thousand years, manifest such a mortal hatred to this religion, but that it is the cause of God? If the Scriptures be not the Word of God, and the religion of the church of Christ be not the true religion, then it must follow that it is a most wicked religion—nothing but lies and abominable delusions, invented by the enemies of God. And if so, it is not likely that the enemies of God, and the wickedness of the world, would have maintained such a perpetual and implacable enmity against it.

2. It is a great argument that the christian church and its religion is from God, that it *has been upheld hitherto through all opposition and dangers*. That the church of God and the true religion, which has been so continually and violently opposed, with so many endeavors to overthrow it—and which has

so often been brought to the brink of ruin through the greatest part of six thousand years—has yet been upheld, most remarkably shows the hand of God in favor of the church. If duly considered, it will appear one of the greatest wonders and miracles. There is nothing like it upon the face of the earth. There is no other society of men that has stood as the church has. As to the old world before the flood, that was overthrown by a deluge of waters; but yet the church of God was preserved. Satan's visible kingdom on earth was then once entirely overthrown; but the visible kingdom of Christ never has been overthrown. All those ancient human kingdoms and monarchies of which we read, have long since come to an end; the Moabites, the Ammonites, the Edomites, &c. The great empire of proud Babylon was overthrown by the Persians; then the Persian empire by the Greeks; after this the Grecian empire was overthrown by the Romans; and finally, the Roman empire fell a sacrifice to various barbarous nations. Here is a remarkable fulfillment of the text, The moth has eaten them up like a garment, and the worm has eaten them like wool; but God's church remains.

Never were there so many and so potent endeavors to destroy any thing else, as to destroy the church. Other kingdoms and societies of men which have appeared to be ten times as strong as the church, have been destroyed with a hundredth part of the opposition the church of God has encountered: which shows that it is God who has been its Protector. For it is most plain that it has not upheld itself by its own strength. For the most part, it has been a very weak society. The children of

Israel were but a handful of people, in comparison of the many who often sought their overthrow. So in Christ's time, and in the beginning of the christian church, they were but a remnant, whereas the whole multitude of the Jewish nation were against them. And so in the beginning of the gentile church, they were but a small number, in comparison with the Heathen who sought their overthrow. In the dark times of Antichrist, before the Reformation, they were but a handful; and yet their enemies could not overthrow them. And commonly the enemies of the church have not only had the greatest number on their side, but they have had the strength in other respects. They have commonly had all the civil authority on their side. So in Egypt, the civil authority was for the Egyptians, and the church were only their slaves, and in their hands; and yet they could not overthrow them. And so it was in the time of Antiochus Epiphanes and Julian the Apostate, the authority was all on the side of the persecutors, and the church was under their dominion; yet all their cruelty could not extirpate it. And for a great many ages the civil authority was all on the side of Antichrist, and the church seemed to be in their hands.

And not only has the strength of its enemies been greater than that of the church, but ordinarily the church has not used what strength they have had in their own defence, but have committed themselves wholly to God. In the time of the Jewish persecutions before the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans, and of the heathen persecutions before Constantine, the Christians did not pretend to make any forcible resistance to their heathen persecutors

So it has been for the most part under the popish persecutions; and yet they have never been able to overthrow the church of God; but it stands to this very day.

And this is still the more exceedingly wonderful, if we consider how often the church has been brought to the brink of ruin, and the case seemed to be desperate. In the time of the old world, when wickedness so prevailed that but one family was left, God wonderfully appeared, and overthrew the wicked world with a flood, and preserved his church. At the Red Sea, when Pharaoh and his host thought they were quite sure of their prey, God appeared, destroyed them, and delivered his church. Under the tenth and last heathen persecution, their persecutors boasted that now they had done the business for the Christians, and overthrown the christian church; yet in the midst of their triumph the christian church rises out of the dust and prevails, and the heathen empire totally falls before it. So when the christian church seemed ready to be swallowed up by the Arian heresy, when Antichrist rose and prevailed, and all the world wondered after the beast; when the church for many hundred years was reduced to a small number, and the power of the world was engaged to destroy those little remnants; yet they could never fully accomplish their design, and at last God wonderfully revived his church by the Reformation, made it to stand as it were on its feet in the sight of its enemies, and raised it out of their reach. And when the popish powers plotted the overthrow of the reformed church, and seemed just about to execute their design, then God wonderfully appeared for the deliverance of his church, as at the revolu-

tion by King William. Presently after the darkest times, God has made his church most gloriously to flourish.

If such a preservation of the church of God, from the beginning of the world hitherto, attended with such circumstances, is not sufficient to show a divine hand in favor of it, what can be devised that would be sufficient? But if this be from the divine hand, then God owns the church, and owns that revelation and those Scriptures on which she is built; and so it will follow that their religion is the true religion, or God's religion, and that the Scriptures, which they make their rule, are his word.

3. We may draw this further argument for the divine authority of the Scriptures, that God has *fulfilled* those things which are foretold in the Scriptures. I have already observed in general, as I have proceeded, how the prophecies of Scripture were fulfilled: I shall now single out but *two instances*.

(1.) One is in *preserving* his church from being ruined. I have just now shown what an evidence this is of the divine authority of the Scriptures in itself considered; I now speak of it as a fulfillment of Scripture prophecy. This is abundantly foretold and promised in the Scriptures, particularly in the text. There it is foretold that other things should fail; other kingdoms and monarchies, which set themselves in opposition, should come to nothing: "The moth should eat them up like a garment, and the worm should eat them like wool." It is here foretold that God's covenant mercy to his church should continue for ever; and so it has hitherto proved, though the church has passed through so

many dangers. The same is promised, Isa. 54: 17. "No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment, thou shalt condemn." And again, Isa. 49: 14, 15, 16. "But Zion said, The Lord hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee. Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of my hands, thy walls are continually before me." The same is promised, Isa. 59: 21; 63: 1, 2. Zech. 12: 2, 3. So Christ promised the same, when he says, "On this rock will I build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." Now if this be not from God, and the Scriptures be not the word of God, and the church of Christ built on the foundation of this word be not of God, how could the persons who foretold this know it? for if the church were not of God, it was a very unlikely thing ever to come to pass. They foretold great opposition and dangers, that other kingdoms should come to nought, and that the church should often be almost swallowed up; and yet that the church should remain. How could they foresee so unlikely a thing but by divine inspiration?

(2.) The other remarkable instance is the *fulfillment of Scripture prophecy concerning Antichrist*. The way that this Antichrist should arise is foretold, viz. not among the heathen, or those nations that never professed Christianity; but by the *falling away of the Christian church* into a corrupt state. 2 Thess. 2: 3. "For that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man



of sin be revealed, the son of perdition." And it is prophesied that this man of sin should set himself up in the temple or visible church of God, pretending to be vested with divine power, as head of the church, ver. 4. And all this is exactly come to pass in the church of Rome. Again it is intimated that the rise of Antichrist should be *gradual*, ver. 7. "For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way." This also came to pass. Again, it is prophesied of this mighty enemy of the Christian church, that he should be a great prince or monarch of the Roman empire: so he is represented in Daniel as a horn of the fourth beast, or fourth monarchy, as the angel himself explains it, Daniel, 7. This also came to pass. Yea, it is prophesied that the seat of this pretended vicar of God, and head of the church, should be the city of Rome itself. It is said expressly that the spiritual whore, or false church, should have her seat on seven mountains or hills. Rev. 17 : 9. "The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth." And ver. 18. "The woman which thou sawest, is that great city which reigneth over the kings of the earth;" which it is certain was at that time the city of Rome. This prophecy also has come to pass.

Further, it was prophesied that this Antichrist should reign over peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues, Rev. 17 : 15; and that all the world should wonder after the beast, Rev. 13 : 3. This also was verified in the church of Rome. It was foretold that this Antichrist should be remarkable for the sin of pride, pretending to great things, and assuming very much to himself. 2 Thess. 2 :

4. "That he should exalt himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped." Rev. 13 : 5. "And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies." In Dan. 7 : 8, 20, the *little horn* is said to have a *mouth speaking very great things*, and his look to be *more stout than his fellows*. This also was verified in the Pope and the church of Rome. It was also prophesied, that Antichrist should be an exceedingly cruel persecutor, Dan. 7 : 21. The same horn "made war with the saints, and prevailed against them." Rev. 13 : 7. "And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them." Rev. 7 : 6. "And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus." This also came to pass in the church of Rome. It was foretold that Antichrist should excel in craft and policy. Dan. 7 : 8. "In this horn were eyes like the eyes of a man." And ver. 20. "Even of that horn that had eyes." This also marks the church of Rome. It was foretold that the kings of Christendom should be subject to Antichrist. Rev. 17 : 12, 13. "And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but received power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast." This also came to pass with respect to the Romish church. It was foretold that he should perform pretended miracles and lying wonders. 2 Thess. 2 : 9. "Whose coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and signs, and lying wonders." Rev. 13 : 13, 14. "And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven

on the earth, in the sight of men, and deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast." This also designates the church of Rome. It was foretold that he should forbid to marry, and to abstain from meats. 1 Tim. 4 : 3. "Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving." This also is exactly fulfilled in the church of Rome. It was foretold that he should be very rich, and arrive at a great degree of earthly splendor and glory. Rev. 17 : 4. "And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand." And 18 : 7, 12, 13, 16. What can more expressly describe the church of Rome? It was foretold that he should forbid any to buy or sell, but those that had his mark. Rev. 13 : 17. "And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name." This also is fulfilled in the church of Rome. It was foretold that he should sell the souls of men, Rev. 18 : 13, where, in enumerating the articles of his merchandise, *the souls of men* are specifically mentioned as one. Is not this also exactly fulfilled in the same church? It was foretold that Antichrist would not suffer the bodies of God's people to be buried. Rev. 11 : 8, 9. "And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, and they shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves." How literally has this come to pass with respect to the church of Rome! I might mention many other things which were foretold of Antichrist, and

show that they were fulfilled most exactly in the Pope and the church of Rome. How strong an argument is this, that the Scriptures are the word of God!

II. From what has been said, we may learn what the spirit of true Christians is: *a spirit of suffering*. Seeing God has so ordered it in his providence, that his church should for so long a time be in a suffering state, yea, often in a state of extreme suffering, we may conclude that the spirit of the true church is a suffering spirit, otherwise God never would have ordered for it so much suffering; for doubtless God accommodates the state and circumstances of the church to the spirit that he has given her. No wonder therefore that Christ so much inculcated upon his disciples that they must deny themselves, and take up their cross, if they would follow him.

And what spirit has the church shown and exercised under her sufferings? She has actually, under those terrible persecutions through which she has passed, rather chosen to undergo those dreadful torments, and to sell all for the pearl of great price; to suffer all that her bitterest enemies could inflict, than to renounce Christ and his religion. History affords a great number of remarkable instances, sets in view a great cloud of witnesses. This abundantly confirms the necessity of possessing a spirit to sell all for Christ, to renounce our own ease, our own worldly profit, our honor, and our all, for *him*, and for the Gospel.

Let us inquire whether we have such a spirit. How does it prove upon trial? Does it prove in fact that we are willing to deny ourselves, and renounce our own worldly interests, and pass through the trials to which we are called in providence? Alas,

how small are our trials, compared with those of many of our fellow Christians in former ages! I would on this occasion apply Jer. 12: 5. "If thou hast run with the footmen and they have wearied thee, then how canst thou contend with horses?" If you have not been able to endure the light trials to which you have been called, how would you be able to endure the far greater trials to which the church has been called in former ages? Every true Christian has *the spirit of a martyr*, and would suffer as a martyr, if he were called to it in providence.

III. Hence we learn what great reason we have assuredly to *expect the fulfillment of what yet remains* to be fulfilled of things foretold in Scripture. The Scriptures foretell many great things yet to be fulfilled before the end of the world: but what great difficulties seem to be in the way! We seem at present to be very far from such a state as is foretold in the Scriptures; but yet we have abundant reason to expect that these things, however seemingly difficult, will be accomplished in their season. We see the faithfulness of God to his promises hitherto; how true he has been to his church, and how he has remembered his mercy from generation to generation. We may say concerning what God has done hitherto for his church, as Joshua to the children of Israel, 23: 14. "Not one thing hath failed of all that the Lord our God hath spoken concerning his church;" but all things are hitherto come to pass agreeable to the divine prediction. This should strengthen our faith in those promises, and encourage us, and stir us up to earnest prayer to God for the accomplishment of the great and glorious things which yet remain to be fulfilled.

## CHAPTER VII.

FROM THE PRESENT TIME TO THE FALL OF  
ANTICHRIST.

I come now to show how the success of Christ's redemption will be carried on from the present time till Antichrist is fallen, and Satan's visible kingdom on earth is destroyed. With respect to this space of time, we have nothing to guide us but the prophecies of Scripture. Through most of the time from the fall of man to the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans we had scripture-history to guide us; and from thence to the present time we had prophecy, together with the accomplishment of it in providence, as related in human histories. But henceforward we have *prophecy alone* to guide us. And here I would pass by those things that are only conjectured, or surmised by some from prophecies of doubtful interpretation, and insist only on those things which are more evident.

We know not what particular events are to come to pass before that glorious work of God's Spirit begins, by which Satan's kingdom is to be overthrown. By the consent of most divines, there are but few things, if any at all, foretold to be accomplished before the *beginning* of that glorious work of God. But some think that the slaying of the witnesses, Rev. 11: 7, 8, is not yet accomplished; and there is a difference of opinion with respect to the pouring

out of the seven vials, Rev. 16, how many are *already*, or how many *remain* to be poured out. A late expositor, indeed, whom I have before mentioned, seems to make it evident that all are already poured out but two, the *sixth* on the river Euphrates, and the *seventh* into the air. I shall not now inquire what is intended by the pouring out of the sixth vial on "the river Euphrates, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared;" but would only say, that it seems to be something *immediately preparatory* to the destruction of spiritual Babylon, as the drying up of the river Euphrates, which ran through the midst of old Babylon, was what prepared the way of the kings of the Medes and Persians (the kings of the east) to come in under the walls and destroy that city.

But whatever this be, it does not appear that it is any thing which shall be accomplished before that work of God's Spirit is *begun*, by which, as it goes on, Satan's visible kingdom on earth shall be utterly overthrown. And therefore I would proceed directly to consider what the Scripture reveals concerning the work of God itself, by which he will bring about this great event, as being the next thing to be accomplished of which we are certain from the prophecies of Scripture.

I. I would observe some things *in general* concerning it.

1. We have all reason to conclude from the Scriptures, that just before this work of God begins, it will be *a very dark time* with respect to the interests of religion in the world. It has been so before preceding glorious revivals of religion: when Christ came, it was an exceedingly degenerate time among the

Jews : and so it was a very dark time before the Reformation. And not only so, but it seems to be foretold in Scripture, that it shall be a time of but little religion, when Christ shall come to set up his kingdom in the world. Thus when Christ spake of his coming, to encourage his elect, who cry to him day and night, Luke, 18 : 8, he adds, " Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth ?" Which seems to denote a great prevalence of infidelity just before Christ's coming to avenge his suffering church. Though Christ's coming at the last judgment is not here to be excluded, yet there seems to be a special respect to his coming to deliver his church from their long-continued suffering, persecuted state, which is accomplished only by his coming at the destruction of Antichrist. Then will be accomplished the following passages. Rev. 6 : 10. " How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth ?" Rev. 18 : 20. " Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her."

It is *now* a very dark time with respect to the interests of religion, wherein there is but little faith, and a great prevalence of infidelity on the earth. There is now a remarkable fulfillment of 2 Pet. 3 : 3. " Knowing this, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts." And Jude, 17, 18. " But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ ; how that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts." Whether the times shall



be any darker still, or how much darker, before the beginning of this glorious work of God, we cannot tell.

2. It is probable from the Scriptures, that this great work of God will be wrought, though very swiftly, yet *gradually*. As the children of Israel were *gradually* brought out of the Babylonish captivity, first one company, and then another, and *gradually* rebuilt their city and temple; and as the Heathen Roman empire was destroyed by a *gradual*, though a very swift prevalency of the Gospel; so, though there are many things which seem to show that the work of God will be exceeding swift,—and many great and wonderful events will very suddenly be brought to pass, and some great parts of Satan's visible kingdom suddenly fall,—yet all will not be accomplished at once, as by some great miracle, like the resurrection of the dead. But this work will be accomplished by *means*, by the preaching of the Gospel and the use of the ordinary means of grace, and so shall be *gradually* brought to pass. Some shall be converted, and be the means of the conversion of others. God's Spirit shall be poured out first to raise up instruments, and then those instruments shall be used with success. And doubtless one nation shall be enlightened and converted, and one false religion and false way of worship exploded after another. By the representation, Dan. 2: 3, 4, the stone cut out of the mountain without hands *gradually* grows. So Christ teaches us that the kingdom of heaven is like a grain of mustard-seed, Matt. 13: 31, 32, and like leaven hid in three measures of meal, ver. 33. The same representation we have in Mark, 4: 26, 27, 28, and in the vi-

sion of the waters of the sanctuary, Ezek. 47.—The Scriptures foretell several successive great and glorious events by which this glorious work shall be accomplished. The angel, speaking to the prophet Daniel of those glorious times, mentions two periods, at the end of which glorious things shall be accomplished. Dan. 12: 11. "And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred and ninety days." But then he adds in the next verse, "Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days;" intimating that something very glorious should be accomplished at the end of the former period, but something much more glorious at the end of the latter.

II. I now proceed to show *how* this glorious work shall be accomplished.

1. The Spirit of God shall be gloriously poured out for the wonderful *revival and propagation* of religion. This great work shall be accomplished, not by the authority of princes, nor by the wisdom of learned men, but by God's Holy Spirit. Zech. 4: 6, 7. "Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts. Who art thou, O great mountain? before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plain, and he shall bring forth the headstone thereof with shoutings, crying, Grace, grace unto it." So the prophet Ezekiel, speaking of this great work of God, says, chap. 39: 29, "Neither will I hide my face any more from them; for I have poured out my Spirit on the house of Israel, saith the Lord God." We know not where this pouring out of the Spirit shall begin, or whether in many

places at once ; or whether what has already taken place be not some forerunner and beginning of it.

This pouring out of the Spirit of God, when it is begun, shall soon bring great multitudes to forsake that vice and wickedness which now so generally prevail ; and shall cause that vital religion, which is now so despised and derided in the world, to revive. The work of conversion shall break forth, and go on in such a manner as never has been hitherto. Isa. 44 : 3, 4, 5. God, by pouring out his Holy Spirit, will furnish men to be glorious instruments of carrying on this work ; will fill them with knowledge and wisdom, and fervent zeal for promoting the kingdom of Christ and the salvation of souls, and propagating the Gospel in the world. The Gospel shall begin to be preached with abundantly greater clearness and power than had heretofore been. This great work of God shall be brought to pass by the preaching of the Gospel, as it is represented, Rev. 14 : 6, 7, 8 ; that before Babylon falls, the Gospel shall be powerfully preached and propagated in the world.

This was typified of old by the sounding of the silver trumpets in Israel in the beginning of their jubilee. Lev. 25 : 9. " Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound on the tenth day of the seventh month : on the day of atonement shall ye make the trumpet sound throughout all your land." The glorious times which are approaching, are the church's jubilee, which shall be introduced by the sounding of the silver trumpet of the Gospel, as is foretold. Isa. 27 : 13. " And it shall come to pass in that day, that the great trumpet shall be blown, and they shall come which were ready to

perish in the land of Assyria, and the outcasts of the land of Egypt, and shall worship the Lord in the holy mount at Jerusalem." And there shall be a glorious outpouring of the Spirit with this clear and powerful preaching of the Gospel, to make it successful for reviving those holy doctrines of religion which are now chiefly ridiculed in the world, and turning many from heresy, from Popery, and from other false religions; and also for turning many from their vice and profaneness, and for bringing vast multitudes savingly home to Christ.

The work of conversion shall go on in a wonderful manner, and spread more and more. Many shall flow together to the goodness of the Lord, one multitude after another continually. Isa. 60: 4, 5. "Lift up thine eyes round about, and see; all they gather themselves together, they come to thee; thy sons shall come from far, and thy daughters shall be nursed at thy side. Then thou shalt see, and flow together." And ver. 8. "Who are these that fly as a cloud, and as doves to their windows?" And as the Gospel shall be preached to every tongue, and kindred, and nation, and people, before the fall of Antichrist; so we may suppose that it will be gloriously successful to bring in multitudes from every nation; and shall spread more and more with wonderful swiftness. Isa. 66: 7-9.

2. This pouring out of the Spirit of God will not affect the overthrow of Satan's visible kingdom, till there has first been made a *violent and mighty opposition*. In this the Scripture is plain, that when Christ is thus gloriously coming forth, when the destruction of Antichrist is ready at hand, and Satan's kingdom begins to totter, the powers of the

kingdom of darkness will rise up, and mightily exert themselves. Thus, after the pouring out of the sixth vial, which was to dry up the river Euphrates, to prepare the way for the destruction of spiritual Babylon, Rev. 16, the powers of hell will be mightily alarmed, and will stir up themselves to oppose the kingdom of Christ, before the seventh vial shall be poured out, which shall give them a final and complete overthrow: (ver. 13, 14,) "three unclean spirits like frogs shall go forth unto the kings of the earth, to gather them together to the battle of the great day of God Almighty." This seems to be the last and greatest effort of Satan to save his kingdom from being overthrown; though, perhaps, he may make as great towards the end of the world to regain it.

When the Spirit begins to be so gloriously poured out, when the devil sees such multitudes flocking to Christ in one nation and another, when the foundations and pillars of his kingdom are ready to come to swift and sudden destruction, all hell will be greatly alarmed. Satan has ever had a dread of having his kingdom overthrown, and has been doing great works to prevent it, especially since the days of Constantine. To this end he set up those mighty kingdoms of Antichrist and Mohammed, and brought in all the heresies, superstitions, and corrupt opinions in the world. But when he sees all begin to fail, it will rouse him exceedingly. If Satan of old dreaded being cast out of the Roman empire, how much more does he dread being cast out of the whole world!

It seems, in this last great opposition, all the forces of Antichrist, and Mohammedanism, and Heathen-

ism will be united: all the forces of Satan's visible kingdom through the whole world of mankind. And therefore it is said that "spirits of devils shall go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them together to the battle of the great day of God Almighty." And these spirits are said to come out of the mouth of the *dragon*, and out of the mouth of the *beast*, and out of the mouth of the *false prophet*; that is, the spirit of Popery, the spirit of Mohammedanism, and the spirit of Heathenism shall be all united. By the beast is meant Antichrist; by the dragon, in this book, is commonly meant the devil, as he reigns over his heathen kingdom; by the false prophet is sometimes meant the Pope and his clergy; but here reference seems to be had to Mohammed, whom his followers call the great prophet of God. 'These will be, as it were, the dying struggles of the old serpent; a battle wherein he will fight as one that is almost desperate.

We know not particularly in what manner this opposition shall be made. It is represented as a battle; it is called *the battle of the great day of God Almighty*. There will be some way or other a mighty struggle between Satan's kingdom and the church, and probably in all ways of opposition that can be: and doubtless great opposition by external force. The princes of the world who are on the devil's side shall join hand in hand; for it is said, "The kings of the earth are gathered together to battle." Rev. 19 : 19. And probably there will be great opposition by subtle disputers and carnal reasoning, persecution, virulent reproaches, craft, and subtilty. The devil now doubtless will ply his skill, as well as strength, to the utmost; and those who

belong to his kingdom, will every where be stirred up and engaged to make an united violent opposition against this holy religion, which they see prevailing so mightily in the world. But,

3. Christ and his church shall in this battle obtain *a complete and entire victory over their enemies*. They shall be totally routed and overthrown in this their last effort. When the powers of hell and earth are thus gathered together against Christ, and his armies shall come forth against them by his word and Spirit, in how august and glorious a manner is this advance of Christ with his church described, Rev. 19 : 11, &c. And to represent how great the victory they should obtain, and how mighty the overthrow of their enemies, it is said, ver. 17, 18, that "all the fowls of heaven are called together, to eat the great supper" given them "of the flesh of kings, and captains, and mighty men," &c. and then, in the following verses, we have a distinct account of the victory and overthrow.

In this victory the seventh vial shall be poured out. It is said, Rev. 16 : 16, of the great army that should be gathered together against Christ: "And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue *Armageddon*;" then it is said, "And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, *It is done*." Now the business is done for Satan and his adherents. When this victory is obtained, all is in effect done. Satan's last and greatest opposition is conquered; all his measures are defeated; the pillars of his kingdom are broken asunder, and will fall of course. The devil is utterly baffled and con-

founded, and knows not what else to do. He now sees his antichristian, Mohammedan, and heathenish kingdoms through the world, all tumbling down. He and his most powerful instruments are taken captive. Now that is in effect done, for which the church of God had been so long waiting and hoping, and so earnestly crying to God, saying, "How long, O Lord, holy and true," &c. Now this time is come.

The angel who set his right foot on the sea, and his left foot on the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven, and sware by *Him that liveth for ever and ever*, that when the seventh angel should sound, the time should be no longer. And now the time is come; now the seventh trumpet sounds, and the seventh vial is poured out, both together; intimating, that now all is finished as to the overthrow of Satan's visible kingdom on earth. This victory shall be by far the greatest ever obtained over Satan and his adherents. By this blow, with which the stone cut out of the mountain without hands shall strike the image of gold, and silver, and brass, and iron, and clay, it shall all be broken to pieces. This will be a finishing blow to the image, so that it shall become as the chaff of the summer threshing-floor.

In this victory will be a most glorious display of divine power. Christ shall therein appear in the character of King of kings, and Lord of lords, Rev. 19: 16. Now Christ shall dash his enemies, even the strongest and proudest of them, in pieces; as a potter's vessel shall they be broken to shivers. Then shall strength be shown out of weakness, and Christ shall cause his church to thresh the mountains. Isa. 41: 15. "Behold, I will make thee a new sharp



threshing-instrument having teeth; thou shalt thresh the mountains, and beat them small, and shalt make the hills as chaff." And then shall be fulfilled Isa. 42:13-15.

III. Consequent on this victory, *Satan's visible kingdom on earth shall be destroyed*. When Satan is conquered in this last battle, the church of Christ will have easy work of it; as when Joshua and the children of Israel had obtained that great victory over the five kings of the Amorites. When the sun stood still, and God sent great hail-stones on their enemies, they had easy work of subduing their cities and country; and in like manner it was also after the other great battle that Joshua had with a great multitude at the waters of Merom. So after this glorious victory of Christ and his church over their enemies, the chief powers of Satan's kingdom, they shall destroy that kingdom in all its cities and countries. After this, the word of God shall have a speedy and swift progress through the earth; as it is said, that on the pouring out of the seventh vial, "the cities of the nations fell, and every island fled away, and the mountains were not found." Rev. 16: 19, 20. When once the stone cut out of the mountain without hands had broken the image in pieces, it was easy to abolish all the remains of it. The very wind will carry it away as the chaff of the summer threshing-floor. Because Satan's visible kingdom on earth shall now be destroyed, therefore it is said that the seventh vial by which this shall be done, shall be poured out into the air; which is represented in Scripture as the special seat of his kingdom; for he is called "the prince of the power of the air," Eph. 2: 2. Now is come the time for

punishing leviathan, that piercing serpent, of which we read, Isa. 27 : 1, " In that day the Lord, with his sore and great and strong sword, shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent ; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea."

Concerning this overthrow of Satan's visible kingdom on earth, I would show wherein it will chiefly consist, with its extent and universality.

1. Wherein it will chiefly consist. I shall mention the particular things in which it will consist, without pretending to determine in what order they shall come to pass, or whether they shall be accomplished together.

(1.) *Heresies, infidelity, and superstition*, among those who have been brought up under the light of the Gospel, will then be abolished ; and particularly *Infidelity*, which is now so bold and confident, shall be driven away, and vanish. All shall agree in the same great and important doctrines of the Gospel. Zech. 14 : 9. " And the Lord shall be King over all the earth ; in that day shall there be one Lord, and his name one." Then shall be abolished all superstitious modes of worship, and all shall cordially agree in worshiping God in his own way. Jer. 32 : 39. " And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them."

(2.) The kingdom of *Antichrist* shall be utterly overthrown. His dominion has been much brought down already by the vial poured out on his throne in the Reformation ; but then it shall be utterly destroyed. Then shall be proclaimed, " Babylon is fallen, is fallen." When the seventh angel sounds,

"the time, times, and half a time" shall be out; and "the time shall be no longer." Then shall be accomplished concerning Antichrist the things which are written, Rev. 18, of the spiritual Babylon, the idolatrous Roman government, that has for so many ages been the great enemy of the Christian church, first under Heathenism, then under Popery,—that proud city which lifted herself up to heaven, in her pride and haughtiness; that cruel, bloody city, shall come down to the ground. Then shall be fulfilled Isa. 26: 5. "For he bringeth down them that dwell on high, the lofty city he layeth it low; he layeth it low, even to the ground, he bringeth it even to the dust." She shall be thrown down with violence, like a great mill-stone cast into the sea, and shall be found no more at all, and shall become an habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. Now shall she be stripped of all her glory, and riches, and ornaments, and shall be cast out as an abominable branch, and shall be trodden down as the mire of the streets. All her policy and craft, in which she so abounded, shall not save her. All the strength and wisdom of this great whore shall fail her, and there shall be none to help her. The kings of the earth, who before gave their power and strength to the beast, shall now hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. Rev. 17: 16.

(3.) Satan's *Mohammedan* kingdom shall be utterly overthrown. The locusts and horsemen, Rev. 9, have their appointed and limited time, and the false prophet shall be taken and destroyed. And then, though Mohammedanism has been so vastly propa-

gated in the world, and is upheld by such a great empire, this smoke, which has ascended out of the bottomless pit, shall be utterly scattered before the light of that glorious day, and the Mohammedan empire shall fall at the sound of the great trumpet which shall then be blown.

(4.) *Jewish infidelity* shall then be overthrown. However obstinate the Jews have been now for above seventeen hundred years in their rejection of Christ, however rare have been the instances of individual conversions ever since the destruction of Jerusalem, and however they have, against the plain teachings of their own prophets, continued to approve of the cruelty of their forefathers in crucifying Christ—yet, when this day comes, the thick veil that blinds their eyes shall be removed, 2 Cor. 3 : 16, divine grace shall melt and renew their hard hearts, “and they shall look on him whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness as one that is in bitterness for his first-born.” Zech. 12 : 10, &c. And then shall the house of Israel be saved: the Jews in all their dispersions shall cast away their old infidelity, and shall have their hearts wonderfully changed, and abhor themselves for their past unbelief and obstinacy. They shall flow together to the blessed Jesus, penitently, humbly, and joyfully owning him as their glorious King and only Savior, and shall with all their hearts, as with one heart and voice, declare his praises unto other nations.

Nothing is more certainly foretold than this national conversion of the Jews, in Rom. 11. There are also many passages of the Old Testament which

cannot be interpreted in any other sense. Besides the prophecies of the calling of the Jews, we have a remarkable providential seal of the fulfillment of this great event, by a kind of continual miracle, *in their being preserved a distinct nation in such a dispersed condition till the present time.* The world affords nothing else like it. There is undoubtedly a remarkable hand of Providence in it. When they shall be called, that ancient people, who alone were God's people for so long a time, shall be his people again, never to be rejected more. They shall then be gathered into one fold together with the Gentiles; and so also shall the remains of the ten tribes, wherever they be, and though they have been rejected much longer than the Jews, be brought in with their brethren. The prophecies of Hosea especially intimate, that in the future glorious times of the church, both Judah and Ephraim, or Judah and the ten tribes, shall be brought in together, and shall be united as one people, as they formerly were under David and Solomon. Hos. 1: 11, &c. Though we do not know the time in which this conversion of Israel will come to pass; yet thus much we may determine by Scripture, that it will be before the glory of the Gentile part of the church shall be fully accomplished; because it is said that their coming in shall be life from the dead to the Gentiles. Rom. 11: 12-15.

(5.) Then shall also Satan's *heathenish* kingdom be overthrown. Gross heathenism now possesses a great part of the earth. But then the heathen nations shall be enlightened with the glorious Gospel. There will be a wonderful spirit of pity towards them, and zeal for their instruction and conversion,

and many shall go forth and carry the Gospel to them. Then shall the joyful sound be heard among them, and the Sun of righteousness shall arise with his glorious light shining on those vast regions of the earth that have been covered with heathenish darkness for many thousand years. Many of them, doubtless ever since the times of Moses and Abraham, have lain thus in a miserable condition, under the cruel tyranny of the devil, who has all this while blinded and befooled them, domineered over them, and made a prey of them. Now the glad tidings of the Gospel shall sound there, and they shall be brought out of darkness into marvelous light.

It is promised in many places, that heathenism shall thus be destroyed. God has said, that the gods that have not made these heavens and this earth, shall perish from the earth, and from under these heavens, Jer. 10 : 11, and that he will utterly abolish idols. Isa. 2 : 18. Then shall the many nations of Africa, who now seem to be in a state but little above the beasts, and in many respects much below them, be visited with glorious light, and delivered from all their darkness, and shall become a civil, christian, intelligent, and holy people. Then shall the vast continent of America, in which now prevails so much ignorance and cruelty, be every where covered with glorious gospel-light and christian love : and instead of worshipping the devil as multitudes now do, they shall serve God, and praises shall be sung every where to the Lord Jesus Christ, the blessed Savior of the world. So we may expect it will be with the great and populous countries of the East, now mostly inhabited by the worshipers of the devil. Then the kingdom of Christ will be

established in those vast countries which have been more lately discovered towards the north and south poles, where men differ very little from the wild beasts, except in impiety. The same will be the case with respect to countries not yet discovered. Thus will be gloriously fulfilled, Isa. 35 : 1, "The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them: the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose." See also verses 6, 7.

2. Having thus shown wherein this overthrow of Satan's kingdom will consist, I come now to observe its *universal extent*. The visible kingdom of Satan shall be overthrown, and the kingdom of Christ set up on the ruins of it, every where throughout the whole habitable globe. Now shall the promise made to Abraham be fulfilled, that in him and in his seed shall "all the families of the earth be blessed;" and Christ become "the desire of all nations." Haggai, 2 : 7. Now the kingdom of Christ shall in the most strict and literal sense be extended to all nations, and the whole earth. 'There are many passages of Scripture that can be understood in no other sense. What can be more universal than Isa. 11 : 9; "For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea." As much as to say, As there is no part of the channel or cavity of the sea but is covered with water, so there shall be no part of the world of mankind but shall be covered with the knowledge of God. So it is foretold, Isa. 45 : 22, that "all the ends of the earth" shall look to Christ and be saved. And to show that the words are to be understood in the most universal sense, it is said in the next verse, "I have sworn by myself, the word is

gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, that unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear." So the most universal expression is used, Dan. 7 : 27, "And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High God."

When the devil was cast out of the Roman empire, because that was the highest and principal part of the world, and the other nations that were left were low and mean in comparison, it was represented as Satan's being cast out of heaven to the earth, Rev. 12 : 9 ; but it is represented that he shall be cast out of the earth too, and shut up in hell, Rev. 20 : 1, 2, 3. This is the greatest of all revolutions ; therefore it is said, Rev. 16 : 17, 18, that on the pouring out of the seventh vial there was "a great earthquake, such as there was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great." And this is the third great dispensation of Providence, which in Scripture is compared to Christ's coming to judgment, Rev. 16 : 15. There, after the sixth vial, and after the devil's armies were gathered together to their great battle, and just before Christ's glorious victory over them, it is said, "Behold, I come quickly ; blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments." So it is called *Christ's coming*, 2 Thess. 2 : 8. Speaking of Antichrist, it is said, "And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming." See also Dan. 7 : 13, 14, where Christ's coming to set up his kingdom on earth, and to destroy Antichrist, is called *coming with the clouds*



*of heaven.* And this is more like Christ's last coming to judgment, than any of the preceding dispensations which are so called. The dispensation is so much greater and more universal, and so more like the day of judgment, which respects the whole world. The great spiritual resurrection of the church of God accompanying it, resembles the general resurrection at the end of the world more than any other. See Rev. 20 : 4.

Terrible judgments and fearful destruction shall now be executed on God's enemies. There will doubtless be at the introducing of this dispensation a visible and awful hand of God against blasphemers, infidels, obstinate heretics, and other enemies of Christ, terribly destroying them, with remarkable tokens of wrath and vengeance. More especially will this dispensation be attended with terrible judgments on Antichrist; the cruel persecutors in the church of Rome shall in a most awful manner be destroyed; which is compared to casting Antichrist into the burning flame, Dan. 7 : 11, and to casting him alive into the lake that burns with fire and brimstone. Rev. 19 : 20.

Then shall this cruel persecuting church suffer those judgments from God, which shall be far more dreadful than her persecutions of the saints. Rev. 18 : 6, 7. The judgments which God shall execute on the enemies of the church are so great, that they are compared to God's sending great hail-stones from heaven upon them, every one of the weight of a talent, as is said on the pouring out of the seventh vial. Rev. 16 : 21. "And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God, be-

cause of the plague of the hail ; for the plague thereof was exceeding great." And now shall be that treading of the wine-press spoken of Rev. 14 : 19, 20.

This shall put an end to the church's suffering state, and shall be attended with their glorious and joyful praises. The church's afflicted state has been continued, excepting some short intermissions, from the resurrection of Christ to this time ; but then shall a final end be put to her suffering state. Indeed after this, near the end of the world, the church shall be greatly threatened ; but it is said it shall be but for a *little season*, Rev. 20 : 3 ; for as the times of the church's rest have been but short, before the long day of her afflictions are at an end ; so whatever affliction she may suffer after this, will be very short. In every other respect, the day of the church's afflictions and persecutions shall now come to a final end. The Scriptures, in many places, speak of this time as the end of the suffering state of the church. So Isa. 51 : 22. "Behold, I have taken out of thy hand the cup of trembling, even the dregs of the cup of my fury, thou shalt no more drink it again." Then shall be proclaimed to the church, Isa. 40 : 1, 2, "Comfort ye, comfort ye, my people, saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned : for she hath received of the Lord's hand double for all her sins." Isa. 54 : 8, 9 ; and 60 : 20. "The Lord shall be thine everlasting light, and the days of thy mourning shall be ended." Zeph. 3 : 15. "The Lord hath taken away thy judgments, he hath cast out thine enemy ; the King of Israel, even the Lord, is in the midst of thee : thou shalt not see evil any more."

The time before this had been the church's sowing-time, wherein she sowed in tears and in blood ; but now is her harvest, wherein she will come again rejoicing, bringing her sheaves with her. Now the time of travail of the woman clothed with the sun is at an end ; now she has brought forth her son : for this glorious setting up of the kingdom of Christ through the world, is that for which the church had been in travail with such terrible pangs for so many ages. Isa. 26 : 17. " Like as a woman with child, that draweth near the time of her delivery, is in pain, and crieth out in her pangs ; so have we been in thy sight, O Lord." Isa. 60 : 20, and 61 : 10, 11. And now the church shall forget her sorrow : now succeed her joyful praise and triumph. Her praises shall then go up to God from all parts of the earth, Isa. 42 : 10-12 ; and praise shall not only fill the earth, but also heaven. The church on earth, and the church in heaven, shall both gloriously rejoice and praise God as with one heart. Without doubt it will be a time of very distinguished joy and praise among the holy prophets and apostles, and the other saints in heaven. Rev. 18 : 20. " Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her." See how universal these praises will be. Isa. 44 : 23. " Sing, O ye heavens, for the Lord hath done it : shout, ye lower parts of the earth : break forth into singing, ye mountains, O forest, and every tree therein : for the Lord hath redeemed Jacob, and glorified himself in Israel." See what joyful praises are sung to God on this occasion by the universal church in heaven and earth, Rev. 19.

This dispensation is, above all preceding ones, like

Christ's coming to judgment, in that it so puts an end to the former state of the world, and introduces the everlasting kingdom of Christ. Now Satan's visible kingdom shall be overthrown, after it had stood ever since the building of Babel ; the old heavens and the old earth shall in a greater measure pass away, and the new heavens and the new earth be set up in a far more glorious manner than ever before.

—Thus I have shown how the success of Christ's purchase has been carried on through the times of the afflicted state of the christian church, from Christ's resurrection till Antichrist is fallen, and Satan's visible kingdom on earth is overthrown.

---

## CHAPTER VIII

THE SUCCESS OF REDEMPTION THROUGH THAT SPACE WHEREIN THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH SHALL, FOR THE MOST PART, BE IN A STATE OF PEACE AND PROSPERITY.

In order to describe this part, I would speak, *first*, of the prosperous state of the church through the greatest part of this period ; and, *secondly*, of the great apostasy there shall be towards the close of it.

I. The *prosperous state* of the church. And in general, I would observe two things :

1. That this is most properly the time of the *kingdom of heaven upon earth*. Though the kingdom

of heaven was in a degree set up soon after Christ's resurrection, and in a further degree in the time of Constantine; and though the christian church in all ages of it is called *the kingdom of heaven*, yet this is the principal time of the kingdom of heaven upon earth, the time principally intended by the prophecies of Daniel, whence the Jews took the name of *the kingdom of heaven*.

2. Now is the *principal fulfillment* of all the *prophecies* of the Old Testament which speak of the glorious times of the Gospel in latter days. Though there has been a glorious fulfillment of those prophecies already, in the times of the apostles and of Constantine; yet the expressions are too high to suit any other time entirely but that which is to succeed the fall of Antichrist. This is most properly the glorious day of the Gospel. Other times are only forerunners and preparatory to this: those were the seed-time, this is the harvest. But more particularly,

(1.) It will be a time of great light and *knowledge*. The present are days of darkness, in comparison of those days. The light of that glorious time shall be so great, that it is represented as though there should then be no night, but only day; no evening nor darkness. Zech. 14: 6, 7. "And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark. But it shall be one day which shall be known to the Lord, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening-time it shall be light." It is further represented as though God would then give such light to his church that it should so much exceed the glory of the light of the sun and moon that they should be ashamed.

Isa. 24 : 23. "Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts shall reign in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before his ancients gloriously."

There is a kind of vail now cast over the greater part of the world, which keeps them in darkness: but then this vail shall be destroyed. Isa. 25 : 7. "And he will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering cast over all people, and the vail that is spread over all nations." Then all countries and nations, even those which are now most ignorant, shall be full of light and knowledge. Great knowledge shall prevail every where. It may be hoped that then many Africans and Indians will be divines, and that excellent books will be published in Africa, in Ethiopia, in Tartary, and other now the most barbarous countries; and not only learned men, but others of more ordinary education, shall then be very knowing in religion. Isa. 32 : 3, 4. "The eyes of them that see, shall not be dim; and the ears of them that hear, shall hearken. The heart also of the rash shall understand knowledge." Knowledge then shall be very universal among all people. Jer. 31 : 34. "And they shall teach no more every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord; for they shall all know him, from the least of them unto the greatest of them."

There shall be a wonderful unfolding of the difficulties in the doctrines of religion, and clearing up of seeming inconsistencies. Crooked things shall be made straight, and rough places shall be made plain, and darkness shall become light before God's people." Difficulties in Scripture shall then be cleared up, and wonderful things shall be discovered in the Word of

God, which were never discerned before. The great discovery of those things in religion which had been before kept hid, seems to be compared to removing the vail, and discovering the ark of the testimony to the people, which before used to be kept in the secret part of the temple, and was never seen by them. Thus, at the sounding of the seventh angel, when it is proclaimed that "the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of his Christ," it is added, that "the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament." So great shall be the increase of knowledge in this time, that heaven shall be as it were opened to the church of God on earth.

(2.) It shall be a time of great *holiness*. Now vital religion shall every where prevail and reign. Those times shall be an exception from what Christ says of the ordinary state of the church, that there shall be *but few saved*; for now holiness shall become general. Isa. 60: 21. "Thy people also shall be all righteous." Not that there will be none remaining in a christless condition; but that visible wickedness shall be suppressed every where, and true holiness shall become general, though not universal. It shall be a wonderful time, not only for the multitude of godly men, but for eminency of grace. Isa. 65: 20. "There shall be no more thence an infant of days, nor an old man that hath not filled his days; for the child shall die a hundred years old; but the sinner, being a hundred years old, shall be accursed." Zech. 12: 8. "He that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the Lord before them." And

holiness shall then be as it were inscribed on every thing, on all men's common business and employments, and the common utensils of life: all shall be dedicated to God, and applied to holy purposes; every thing shall then be done to the glory of God. Isa. 23: 18. "And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the Lord." Zech. 14: 20, 21. And as God's people then shall be eminent in holiness of heart, so they shall be also in holiness of life and practice.

(3.) It shall be a time wherein religion shall in every respect be *uppermost* in the world. It shall be had in great esteem and honor. The saints have hitherto for the most part been depressed, and wicked men have governed. But now they will reign. The kingdom shall be given into the hands of the saints of the *Most High God*, Dan. 7: 27; and *they shall reign on earth*, Rev. 5: 10; they shall live and *reign with Christ a thousand years*, Rev. 20: 4. In that day, such persons as are eminent for true piety and religion shall be chiefly promoted to places of trust and authority. Vital religion shall then take possession of kings' palaces and thrones; and those who are in highest advancement shall be holy men. Isa. 49: 23. "And kings shall be thy nursing-fathers, and their queens thy nursing-mothers." Kings shall employ all their power, and glory, and riches for the advancement of the honor and glory of Christ, and the good of his church. Isa. 60: 16. "Thou shalt also suck the milk of the Gentiles, and shalt suck the breast of kings." And the great men of the world, and the rich merchants and others who have great wealth and influence, shall devote all to Christ and his church. Psalm 45: 12. "The daugh-



ter of Tyre shall be there with a gift, even the rich among the people shall entreat thy favor."

(4.) Those will be times of *great peace and love*. There shall then be universal peace and a good understanding among the nations of the world, instead of confusion, wars, and bloodshed. Isa. 2 : 4. "And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people; and they shall beat their swords into plough-shares, and their spears into pruning-hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." It is represented as if all instruments of war should be destroyed, having become useless. Psal. 46 : 9. "He maketh wars to cease unto the end of the earth: he breaketh the bow and cutteth the spear in sunder; he burneth the chariot in the fire." See also Zech. 9 : 10. Then shall all nations dwell quietly and safely, without fear of any enemy. Isa. 32 : 18. "And my people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting-places." Also Zech. 8 : 10, 11.

Then shall malice, and envy, and wrath, and revenge be suppressed every where; and peace and love prevail between one man and another; which is most elegantly set forth in Isa. 11 : 6-10. Then shall there be peace and love between rulers and ruled. Rulers shall love their people, and with all their might seek their best good; and the people shall love their rulers, joyfully submit to them, and give them the honor which is their due. So shall there be happy love between ministers and their people. Mal. 4 : 6. "And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers." Then shall flourish in

an eminent manner those christian virtues of meekness, forgiveness, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, and brotherly kindness, those excellent fruits of the Spirit. Men, in their temper and disposition, shall then be like the Lamb of God, the lovely Jesus. The body shall be conformed to the head.

Then shall all the world be united in one amiable society. All nations, in all parts of the world, on every side of the globe, shall then be knit together in sweet harmony. All parts of God's church shall assist and promote the spiritual good of one another. A communication shall then be upheld between all parts of the world to that end; and the art of navigation, which is now applied so much to favor men's covetousness and pride, and is used so much by wicked debauched men, shall then be consecrated to God, and applied to holy uses. See Isa. 60 : 5-9. And then men will be abundant in expressing their love one to another, not only in words, but in deeds of charity. Isa. 32 : 5. "The vile person shall be no more called liberal, nor the churl said to be bountiful;" but (ver. 8) "the liberal deviseth liberal things, and by liberal things shall he stand."

(5.) It will be a time of *excellent order* in the church of Christ. The true government and discipline of the church will then be settled and put into practice. All the world shall then be as one church—one orderly, regular, beautiful society. And as the body shall be one, so the members shall be in beautiful proportion to each other. Then shall be verified Psal. 122 : 3. "Jerusalem is builded as a city that is compact together."

(6.) The church of God shall then be *beautiful*

*and glorious*; yea, it will appear in the perfection of beauty. Isa. 60 : 1. "Arise, shine, for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee." Isa. 61 : 10. "He hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels." On these accounts the church will then be the greatest image of heaven itself.

(7.) That will be a time of the greatest *temporal prosperity*. Such a spiritual state as we have just described, has a natural tendency to health and long life: and that this will actually be the case, is evident by Zech. 8 : 4. "Thus saith the Lord of hosts, There shall yet old men and old women dwell in the streets of Jerusalem, and every man with his staff in his hand for very age." It has also a natural tendency to produce ease, quietness, pleasantness, and cheerfulness of mind, also wealth, and a great increase of children; as is intimated in Zech. 8 : 5. "And the streets of the city shall be full of boys and girls playing in the streets thereof." But further, the temporal prosperity of the people of God will also be promoted by a remarkable blessing from heaven. Isa. 65 : 21. "They shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them." Mic. 4 : 4. "But they shall sit every man under his vine, and under his fig-tree, and none shall make them afraid." Zech. 7 : 12. "For the seed shall be prosperous, the vine shall give her fruit, and the ground her increase, and the heavens shall give their dew, and I will cause the remnant of this people to possess all these things." See also Jer. 31 : 12,

13; Amos, 9 : 13. Yea, then they shall receive all manner of tokens of God's presence, acceptance, and favor. Jer. 33 : 9. "And it shall be to me a name of joy, a praise and an honor before all the nations of the earth, which shall hear all the good that I do unto them: and they shall fear and tremble for all the goodness and for all the prosperity that I procure unto it." Even the days of Solomon were but an image of those days, as to the temporal prosperity which shall then prevail.

(8.) It will also be *a time of great rejoicing*. Isa. 35 : 10. "And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs, and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away." Chap. 55 : 12. "For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you." Chap. 66 : 11. "That ye may suck, and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations: that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory." Chap. 12 : 3. "With joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of salvation." That will be the church's glorious wedding-day with Christ upon earth. Rev. 19 : 7. "Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready." Verse 9. "Blessed are they which are called to the marriage-supper of the Lamb."

(9.) The Scriptures every where represent this prosperity to be of *long continuance*. The former intervals of rest and prosperity, as we before observed, are represented to be short; but the representations of this state are quite different. Rev. 20 :

4. "And I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus,—and they lived and reigned with Christ *a thousand years*." Isa. 60 : 15. "Whereas thou hast been forsaken and hated, so that no man went through thee, I will make thee an eternal excellency, a joy of *many generations*." This may suffice as to the prosperous state of the church through the greater part of the period from the destruction of Satan's visible kingdom in the world, to Christ's appearing in the clouds of heaven to judgment.

II. I now come to speak of the *great apostasy* there shall be towards the close of this period, and how the church shall, for a short time, be threatened by her enemies. And this I shall do under three particulars.

1. A little before the end of the world, *a great part of the world* shall fall away from Christ and his church. It is said, Rev. 20 : 3, that Satan should be cast into the bottomless pit, and shut up, and have a seal set upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more *till the thousand years be fulfilled*; and that afterwards he must be loosed out of his prison for a little season. Accordingly we are told, ver. 7, 8, that when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and go forth to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog. This intimates that the apostasy would be very general. The nations of the four quarters of the earth shall be deceived; and the number of those who shall now turn enemies to Christ shall be vastly great, as the army of Gog and Magog is represented by Ezekiel. It is said, Rev. 20 : 8, that the number of them is

"as the sand of the sea," and that "they went up on the breadth of the earth," as if they were an army large enough to reach from one side of the earth to the other.

Thus, after a happy and glorious season, such a long day of light and holiness, of love, and peace, and joy, it shall again be a dark time. Satan shall begin to set up his dominion again in the world; and this world shall again become a scene of darkness and wickedness. The bottomless pit shall be opened, and devils shall come up again out of it, and a dreadful smoke shall ascend to darken the world. And the church of Christ, instead of extending to the utmost bounds of the world, as it did before, shall be reduced to narrow limits. The world of mankind being continued so long in a state of great prosperity, shall now begin to abuse their prosperity, to serve their lust and corruption. Luke, 17 : 26, &c.

2. Those apostates shall make *great opposition* to the church of God. The church shall be threatened with a sudden and entire overthrow by them. It is said Satan shall gather them together to battle, as the sand on the sea-shore: and they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city. So that this beloved city shall seem just ready to be swallowed up by them: for her enemies shall not only threaten her, but shall actually have gathered together against her; and not only so, but shall have besieged her, shall have compassed her about on every side. However, there is nothing in the prophecy which seems to show that the church had actually fallen into their hands, as it had fallen into

the hands of Antichrist, to whom it was given to make war with the saints, and to overcome them. God will never suffer this to take place after the fall of Antichrist; for then the day of her mourning shall be ended, though she shall be most alarmingly threatened with utter and sudden destruction.

3. Now the state of things will seem most remarkably to *call for Christ's immediate appearance to judgment*. For then the world shall be filled with the most aggravated wickedness. Much the greater part of the world shall have become visibly wicked and open enemies to Christ, and their wickedness shall be dreadfully aggravated by their apostasy. Before the fall of Antichrist, most of the world is full of visibly wicked men. But the greater part of these are poor Heathens, who never enjoyed the light of the Gospel; and others have been bred up in Mohammedan or Popish darkness; but these will have apostatized from the christian church, the visible kingdom of Christ, in which they enjoyed the great light and privileges of glorious times, which shall be incomparably greater than the light and privileges the church of God now enjoy. This apostasy will be more like the apostasy of the devils than any before: for the devils apostatized and turned enemies of Christ, though they enjoyed the light of heaven; and these will apostatize and turn enemies to him, though they have enjoyed the light and privileges of the glorious times of the church. That such should turn open and avowed enemies to Christ, and seek the ruin of his church, will cry aloud for such immediate vengeance as was executed on the devils when they fell.

The wickedness of the world will remarkably call for Christ's immediate appearing in flaming fire to take vengeance on them, because of the way in which they shall manifest their wickedness. This will be by scoffing and blaspheming Christ and his holy religion; and particularly, they will scoff at the notion of Christ's coming to judgment, of which the church shall be in expectation, and shall warn them. For now doubtless will be the greatest fulfillment of 2 Pet. 3: 3, 4. "Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation." They shall be in no expectation of the coming of Christ to judgment, and shall laugh at the idea. They shall trample all such things under foot, and shall give up themselves to their lusts, or to eat and drink, and wallow in sensual delights, as though they were to be here for ever. They shall despise the warnings the church shall give them of the coming of Christ to judgment, as the people of the old world despised what Noah told them of the approaching flood, and as the people of Sodom did when Lot said to them, "The Lord will destroy this city." Their wickedness on this account will cry aloud to heaven for Christ's appearing in flaming fire to take vengeance of his enemies; and also because they shall exercise their wickedness in a daring design and violent attempt against the holy city of God, wherein for so long a time so much of the religion of Christ had been seen.

And the great number of the wicked is another thing which shall especially call for Christ's coming;



for the world then will doubtless be full of people, having continued so long in so great a state of prosperity, without such terrible desolating extremities as wars, pestilences, and the like, to diminish them. And the greater part of the world, which shall be so populous, will be wicked contemptuous apostates from God. Undoubtedly the world will then be by far fuller of wickedness than ever it was before, from its foundation. And if the wickedness of the old world, when men began to multiply on the earth, called for the destruction of the world by a deluge of *water*, this wickedness will as much call for its destruction by a deluge of *fire*.

Again, the circumstances of the church at that day will also eminently call for the immediate appearing of Christ, as they will be compassed about by their blasphemous murderous enemies, just ready to swallow them up. And it will be a most distressing time with the church, excepting the comfort they will have in the hope of deliverance from God: for all other help will seem to fail. The case will have reached the last extremity, and there will be an immediate need that Christ should come to their deliverance. And though the church shall be so eminently threatened, yet so will Providence order it, that it shall be preserved till Christ shall appear in his immediate presence, coming in the glory of his Father, with all his holy angels. Then shall all the elect be gathered in. The work of conversion, which has been carried on from the beginning of the church after the fall through all those ages, shall be carried on no more. There never shall another soul be converted. Every one of those many millions, whose names are written in the book

of life before the foundation of the world, shall be brought in; not one soul shall be lost. And the mystical body of Christ, which has been growing since it first began in the days of Adam, will be complete, having every one of its members. In this respect, the work of redemption will now be finished. And now the end for which the means of grace have been instituted shall be obtained—all that effect which was intended, shall now be accomplished.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE GENERAL JUDGMENT.

Thus I have shown how the success of Christ's redemption has been accomplished during the continuance of the christian church under the means of grace. We have seen what great revolutions there have been, and are to be, during this space of time; how the great wheels of providence have gone round for the accomplishment of that kind of success of Christ's purchase which consists in the bestowment of grace on his people. In the prosecution of the subject, we are come to the time when all the wheels have gone round; the course of things in this state of it is finished, and all things are ripe for Christ's coming to judgment.

The success of Christ's purchase is of two kinds, consisting either in *grace* or *glory*. That of the former is to be seen in the works of God while the church is continued under the means of grace; that of the latter will chiefly be accomplished at the day

of judgment. Having already shown how the *former* kind of success has been accomplished, I come now to the *latter*, that kind of success which is accomplished in the bestowment of *glory* on the church at the day of judgment. And here I would mention two or three things in *general*, concerning this kind of success of Christ's purchase.

1. How *great* the success of Christ's purchase is, appears chiefly in this, that it summarily consists in the *salvation* of his people. But this bestowment of *glory* is eminently called *their salvation*. Heb. 9 : 28. "To them that look for him, shall he appear the second time, without sin unto salvation." So it is called *redemption*, being eminently that wherein the redemption of the church consists. Eph. 4 : 30. "Sealed unto the day of redemption;" and Luke, 21 : 28, Eph. 1 : 14, "Redemption of the purchased possession."

2. All that precedes this, while the church is under the means of grace, is only to make way for the success which is to be accomplished in the bestowment of glory. The *means* of grace, and God's *grace* itself, are bestowed on the elect to make them meet for glory.

3. All those glorious things which were brought to pass for the church while under the means of grace, are but images and shadows of this. So were those glorious things which were accomplished for the church in the days of Constantine; and so is all that glory which is to succeed the fall of Antichrist. However great, it is all but a shadow of what will be bestowed at the day of judgment. But I hasten more particularly to show how this kind of success will be accomplished.

1. *Christ will appear in the glory of his Father*, with all his holy angels, coming in the clouds of heaven. When the world are reveling in their wickedness, and compassing the holy city, just ready to destroy it, then shall the glorious Redeemer make his appearance. He by whom this redemption has all along been carried on, shall appear in the sight of the world; the light of his glory shall break forth; the whole world shall immediately have notice of it, and they shall lift up their eyes and behold this wonderful sight. *Every eye shall see him*, Rev. 1 : 7. Christ shall appear coming in his human nature, in that same body (now glorified) which was born in a stable and laid in a manger, which afterwards was so cruelly used, and nailed to the cross.

Men shall now lift up their eyes and see him coming in such majesty and glory as is to us utterly inconceivable. The glory of the sun in a clear firmament will be but darkness in comparison of it; and all the glorious angels and archangels shall attend him; thousand thousands ministering to him, and ten thousand times ten thousand round about him. How different a person will he then appear from what he did at his first coming, when he was as a root out of dry ground, a poor, despised, afflicted man! How different now is his appearance, in the midst of those glorious angels, principalities and powers, in heavenly places attending him, from what it was when in the midst of a ring of soldiers, with his mock robe and his crown of thorns, buffeted and spit upon, or hanging on the cross between two thieves, with a multitude of his enemies triumphing over him!

This will be a most unexpected sight to the wicked world : it will come as a cry at midnight : they shall be taken in the midst of their wickedness, and it will give them a dreadful alarm. It will at once break up their revels, their eating and drinking, and carousing. It will put a quick end to the design of the great army that will then be compassing the camp of the saints : it will make them let drop their weapons out of their hands. The world, then full of people, most of them wicked men, will be filled with dolorous shrieking and crying ; for all the kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Rev. 1 : 7. And where shall they hide themselves ? How will the sight of that awful majesty terrify them in the midst of their wickedness ! Then they shall see who he is, what kind of a person he is whom they have mocked and scoffed, and whose church they have been endeavoring to overthrow. This sight will change the voice of their laughter and singing, while they are marrying and giving in marriage, and the voice of their scoffing into hideous, hellish yelling. Their countenances shall be changed from a show of carnal mirth, haughty pride, and contempt of God's people ; and ghastly terror and amazement, trembling and chattering of teeth shall seize upon them.

But with respect to the saints, it shall be a joyful and most glorious sight to them ; for it will at once deliver them from all fear of their enemies, who were before compassing them about, just ready to swallow them up. Deliverance shall come in their extremity ; the glorious Captain of their salvation shall appear for them at a time when no other help appeared. Then shall they lift up their heads, and

their redemption shall be drawing nigh. Luke, 21 : 28. Christ will appear with infinite majesty, yet at the same time they shall see infinite love in his countenance. And thus to see their Redeemer coming in the clouds of heaven, will fill their hearts full of gladness. Their countenances also shall be changed, not as the countenances of the wicked, but from sorrow to exceeding joy and triumph. And now the work of redemption will be finished in another sense: the whole church shall be completely and eternally freed from all persecution and molestation from wicked men and devils.

II. *The last trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised*, and the living changed. God sent forth his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, to gather together his elect from the four corners of the earth in a mystical sense, before the destruction of Jerusalem; that is, he sent forth the apostles and others to preach the Gospel all over the world. And so in a mystical sense the great trumpet was blown at the beginning of the glorious times of the church. But now the great trumpet is blown in a more literal sense, with a mighty sound which shakes the earth. There will be a great signal given by a mighty sound made, which is called *the voice of the archangel*. 1 Thess. 4 : 16. "For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God." On the sound of the great trumpet the dead shall be raised every where. The number of the dead is now very great. How many has death cut down since the world has stood! But then the number will be much greater; the world shall have stood longer, and through most of the remaining time it

will doubtless be much fuller of inhabitants than ever it has been. All these shall now rise from the dead. The graves shall be opened in all parts of the world, and the sea shall give up the innumerable dead that are in it. Rev. 20 : 13.

And now all the inhabitants that ever shall have been upon the face of the earth shall appear upon earth at once. All that have been of the church of God in all ages : Adam and Eve, the first parents of mankind ; Abel, and Seth, and Methuselah, and all the saints who were their contemporaries ; Noah and Abraham, Isaac and Jacob ; the prophets of Israel, the holy apostles of Jesus Christ, and all the saints of their times ; and all the holy martyrs who fell under furious persecutions. There will be found all who belonged to the church in its wilderness-state during the dark times of Antichrist, and all who have suffered under his persecuting cruelty, with all the saints that have been, and that shall be to the end of the world. Now also all the enemies of the church in all ages shall appear again ; all the wicked Heathens, and Jews, and Mohammedans, and Papists. Sinners of all sorts ; demure hypocrites, profane sensualists, heretics, infidels, and all cruel persecutors, and all who have died or shall die in sin, shall come together.

And at the same time that the dead are raised, the living shall be changed. The bodies of the wicked who shall then be living, shall be so changed as to fit them for eternal torment ; and the bodies of all the living saints shall be changed to be like unto Christ's glorious body. 1 Cor. 15 : 51-53. The bodies of all the saints shall be so changed as to render them for ever incapable of pain, or affliction, or unceasi-

ness; and all that dullness and heaviness, and all that deformity which their bodies had before, shall be put off; and they shall put on strength and beauty, activity, and incorruptible unfading glory.

And now the work of redemption shall be finished in another respect: all God's people shall now be actually redeemed both in soul and body. Before this, the work of redemption, as to its actual success, was but incomplete; for only the *souls* of the redeemed were actually saved and glorified, excepting in some few instances: but now all the *bodies* of the saints shall be saved and glorified together; they shall all be glorified in the whole man, the soul and body in union.

III. Now shall *the saints be caught up in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and all wicked men and devils arraigned before the judgment-seat.* When the dead saints are raised, then the whole church, consisting of all God's people through all ages, will stand together on the earth, at least all excepting those few whose bodies were glorified before; and then they shall all mount up as with wings to meet Christ, who shall fix his throne in the air, whence he may be seen by all the vast multitude that shall be gathered before him. Then shall the saints ascend up to their Savior. Thus the apostle tells us, that when the dead in Christ are raised, and the living changed, then those who are alive and remain, shall be caught up together with them, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we be ever with the Lord. 1 Thess. 4: 16, 17. What a wonderful sight will that be, when all the many millions of saints are thus mounting up from all parts of the world.



Then shall the work of redemption be finished in another respect: then shall the whole church be perfectly and for ever delivered from this present evil world; shall take their everlasting leave of this earth, where they have been strangers, and which has been for the most part a scene of trouble and sorrow; where the devil has reigned as God, and has greatly molested them, and which has been such a scene of wickedness and abomination; where Christ their Lord has been crucified; and where they have been so hated, reproached and persecuted. They shall leave it, and shall never set foot on it again. And there shall be an everlasting separation made between them and wicked men. Before, they were mixed together, and it was impossible in many instances to determine their characters; but now all shall become visible; both saints and sinners shall appear in their true characters and forms.

Then shall all the church be seen coming from the east and west, and north and south, and ascending to the right hand of Christ. What a mighty cloud of them will there be! All that ever have been of the church of God: all that were before Christ; all the multitude of saints in the apostles' time; all that were in the days of Constantine the Great; all that were before and since the Reformation; and all the great multitude of saints that shall be in all the glorious times of the church, when the whole earth shall for so many generations be full of saints; and also all that shall be living when Christ shall come—all these shall be seen flocking together in the clouds at his right hand!

And then also the work of redemption will be

finished in another respect : the church shall all be gathered together. They all belonged to one society before, but yet were widely separated. Some were in heaven, and some on earth ; and those who were on earth were separated, many of them by wide oceans and vast continents. But now they shall all be gathered together, never to be separated more. And not only shall all the members of the church now be gathered together, but all shall be gathered unto their Head, into his immediate glorious presence, never to be separated from him any more.

At the same time all wicked men and devils shall be brought before the judgment-seat of Christ. These shall be gathered to the left hand of Christ, and, as it seems, will still remain upon the earth, and not be caught up into the air, as the saints shall be. The devil, that old serpent, shall now be dragged up out of hell. He, that first procured the fall and misery of mankind, and has so set himself against their redemption, and has all along shown himself such an inveterate enemy to the Redeemer, shall never more have any thing to do with the church of God, nor be suffered in the least to afflict or molest any member of it for ever. Instead of that, now he must be judged, and receive the due reward of his deeds. Now is come the time which he has always dreaded, and trembled at the thought of ; the time wherein he must be judged, and receive his full punishment. He who by his temptation maliciously procured Christ's crucifixion, and triumphed as though he had obtained the victory, even *he* shall see the consequences of that death which he procured. Now he must stand before the same Jesus, to be judged, condemned, and eternally destroyed by him.

If Satan, the prince of hell, trembles at the thought of it thousands of years beforehand, how much more will he tremble, proud and stubborn as he is, when he comes to stand at Christ's bar!

Then shall he also stand at the bar of the saints, whom he has so hated, afflicted, and molested: for the saints shall judge him with Christ. 1 Cor. 6 3. "Know ye not that we shall judge angels? Now shall he be as it were subdued under the church's feet. Rom. 16 : 20. Satan, when he first tempted our first parents to sin, deceitfully and lyingly told them that they should be as gods; but little did he think that they should indeed be so far *as gods*, as to be assessors with God to judge him. Much less did he think that one of that *nature* which he then tempted, one of the posterity of those very *persons* whom he tempted, should actually be united to God; that as God he should judge the world, and that he himself must stand trembling and astonished before his judgment-seat. But thus all the devils in hell, who have so opposed Christ and his kingdom, shall now at last stand in utmost amazement and horror before Christ and his church, who shall appear to condemn them.

Now also shall all Christ's other enemies be brought to appear before him. Now shall proud scribes and Pharisees, who had such a malignant hatred of Christ while in his state of humiliation, and who persecuted him to death, be made to come. Now those before whose judgment-seat Christ once stood as a malefactor at their bar—and those who mocked him, buffeted him, and spit in his face—shall see Christ in his awful glory, as forewarned, Matt. 26 : 64, 65. Then *Christ* was before *their*

judgment-seat; but now it is *their* turn to stand before *his* judgment-seat, with inconceivable horror and amazement, with ghastly countenances, quaking limbs, chattering teeth, and knees smiting one against another.

Now also all the cruel enemies and persecutors of the church in all ages shall come in sight together. Pharaoh and the Egyptians, Antiochus Epiphanes, the malignant Scribes and Pharisees, the persecuting heathen emperors, Julian the Apostate, the cruel persecuting Popes and Papists, Gog and Magog, shall all appear at once before the judgment-seat of Christ. They and the saints who have in every age been persecuted by them, shall come, and must now confront one another before the great Judge. And now shall the saints on their glorious thrones be made the judges of those unjust kings and rulers who before judged and condemned them, and put them to cruel death. Now shall those persecutors behold the glory to which they are arrived, whom they before despised, and so cruelly treated. Thus wonderfully will the state of things be altered; now will all things be coming to rights.

IV. *The righteousness of the church shall be manifested, and all the wickedness of their enemies be brought to light.* Those saints who had been the object of hatred, reproach and contempt in the world, reviled and condemned by their persecutors without a cause, shall now be fully vindicated. They shall now appear clothed with the glorious robe of Christ's righteousness. It shall be most manifest before the world, that Christ's righteousness is theirs, and they shall gloriously shine forth in it. Then shall their inherent holiness be made manifest

and all their good works be brought to light. The good things which they did in secret shall now be manifested openly. Those holy ones of God, who had been treated as the filth and offscouring of the earth, as if not fit to live, as worse than beasts or devils, shall now appear to have been the excellent of the earth. Now God shall bring forth their righteousness as the light, and their judgment as the noon-day. And now it shall appear who *indeed* were those wicked persons that were not fit to live; when all the wickedness of the enemies of Christ and his church, their pride, their malice, their cruelty, their hatred of true religion, shall be set forth in all its horrid acts, in its proper colors.

And now the righteous may be heard before this great Judge, who could not be heard before those unjust judges. Now they shall declare their cause, and rise up in judgment against their persecutors, and shall declare how they had been treated by them. And now all the wickedness of the wicked shall be brought to light, even all their *secret* wickedness, and their very hearts shall be opened to view before the bright light of that great day. Things which have been spoken in the ear, in the closet, and done in the dark, shall be manifested in the light, and proclaimed before angels and men.

V. *The sentence shall be pronounced on the righteous and the wicked.* Christ, the glorious judge, shall pass that blessed sentence on the church at his right hand, *Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.* This sentence shall be pronounced with infinite love, and the voice will cause every heart to overflow with joy. Thus Christ shall pro-

nounce a sentence of justification on millions, who before had a sentence of condemnation passed upon them by their persecutors. He will thus put honor upon those who have been before despised ; he will own them for his, and will put a crown of glory upon their heads before the world : and then shall they shine forth as the sun with Christ in glory and joy, in the sight of all their enemies.

And then shall the sentence of condemnation be passed on the wicked, *Depart, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.* Thus shall the church's enemies be condemned ; in which sentence of condemnation the holy martyrs, who have suffered from them, shall concur. When the words of this sentence are pronounced, they will strike every heart of those at the left hand with inconceivable horror and amazement. Every syllable of it will be more terrible than a stream of lightning through their hearts. What horrible shrieking, quaking, gnashing of teeth, distortions of countenance, hideous looks, hideous actions, and hideous voices, will be seen through all that vast throng !

VI. Upon this, Christ and all his saints, and all the holy angels ministering to them, shall leave this lower world, and ascend towards the highest heavens. Christ shall ascend in as great glory as he descended, and in some respects greater : for now he shall ascend with his elect church with him, glorified in body and soul. Christ's first ascension to heaven soon after his own resurrection was very glorious. But this his second ascension, with his mystical body, his whole church, shall be far more glorious. The redeemed church shall all ascend with him in a most joyful and triumphant manner :

and all their enemies and persecutors, who shall be left behind to be consumed, shall see the sight and hear their songs. And thus Christ's church shall for ever leave this accursed world, to go into the highest heavens, the paradise of God, the kingdom prepared for them from the foundation of the world.

VII. When they are gone, *this world shall be set on fire*, and turned into a great furnace, wherein all the enemies of Christ and his church shall be tormented for ever and ever. 2 Pet. 3:7. "But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men." How will it strike the wicked with horror, when the fire begins to lay hold upon them, and they find no way to escape from it! What shrieking and crying will there be among those many millions when they begin to enter into this great furnace, when the whole world shall be a furnace of the fiercest and most raging heat! insomuch that the apostle Peter says, 2 Pet. 3:10, 12, "that the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also, and the works that are therein, shall be burnt up; and the heavens being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat." And so fierce shall be its heat, that it shall burn the earth into its very centre: which seems to be what is meant, Deut. 32:22. "For a fire is kindled in my anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains."

And here shall all the persecutors of the church of God burn in everlasting fire, who had before

burnt the saints at the stake; and shall suffer torments far beyond all that their utmost wit and malice could inflict on the saints. And here the bodies of all the wicked shall burn, and be tormented to all eternity, and never be consumed; and the wrath of God shall be poured out on their souls. Though the souls of the wicked in hell do now suffer dreadful punishment, yet their punishment will be so increased at the day of judgment that what they suffered before is, in comparison of it, as an imprisonment to the execution which follows. And now the devil, that old serpent, shall receive his full punishment; now that for fear of which he before trembled, shall fully come upon him. This world, which formerly used to be the place of his kingdom, where he set up himself as God, shall now be the place of his complete punishment, of full and everlasting torment. And in this, one design of the work of redemption, putting Christ's enemies under his feet, shall be perfectly accomplished. His enemies shall now be made his footstool in the fullest degree. Now shall be the most perfect fulfillment of Gen. 3. 15, "It shall bruise thy head."

VIII. At the same time, *all the church shall enter with Christ, their glorious Lord, into the highest heavens*, and there enter on the state of their highest and eternal blessedness and glory. While the lower world, which they have left under their feet, is seized with the fire of God's vengeance, and flames are kindling upon it, and the wicked are entering into everlasting fire, the whole church shall enter, with their glorious Head, and all the holy angels attending, in a joyful manner into the eternal paradise of God, the palace of the great Jehovah, their heavenly



**Father.** The gates shall open wide for them to enter, and there Christ will bring them into his chambers in the highest sense. Here Christ will bring them and present them in glory to his Father, saying, *Here am I, and the children which thou hast given me*; as much as to say, Here am I, with every one of those whom thou gavest me from eternity to take the care of that they might be redeemed and glorified, and to redeem whom I have done and suffered so much, and to make way for whose redemption I have for so many ages been accomplishing such great changes. Here they are now perfectly redeemed in body and soul; I have delivered them from all the ill fruits of the fall, and freed them from all their enemies: I have brought them altogether into one glorious society, and united them all in myself: I have openly justified them before all angels and men, and here I have brought them all away from that accursed world where they have suffered so much, and have brought them before thy throne: I have done all that for them which thou hast appointed me: I have perfectly cleansed them in my blood, and here they are in perfect holiness, shining with thy perfect image. And then the Father will accept of them, own them all for his children, welcome them to the eternal and perfect inheritance and glory of his house, and will on this occasion give more glorious manifestations of his love than ever before, and will admit them to a more full and perfect enjoyment of himself.

Now shall be the marriage of the Lamb in the most perfect sense. The commencement of the glorious times of the church on earth, after the fall of Antichrist, is represented as the marriage of the Lamb;

but after this we read of another marriage of the Lamb at the close of the day of judgment.—After the beloved disciple had given an account of the day of judgment, Rev. 20: 21, he represents that he saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. Christ shall bring his church into his Father's house in heaven, as his bride, whom he loved and gave himself for, without spot or wrinkle, or any such thing.

The bridegroom and the bride shall then enter into heaven, both having on their wedding-robcs, attended with all the glorious angels. And there they shall enter on the feast and joys of their marriage before the Father; they shall then begin an everlasting wedding-day. This shall be the day of the gladness of Christ's heart, wherein he will greatly rejoice, and all the saints shall rejoice with them. Christ shall rejoice over his bride, and the bride shall rejoice in her husband, in the state of her consummate and everlasting blessedness. See Rev. chapp. 21; 22.

And now the whole work of redemption is finished. Now the top-stone of the building is laid. In the progress of our discourse we have followed the church of God in all her great changes, all her tossings to and fro, all her storms and tempests through the many ages of the world. We have seen her enter the harbor, and landed in the highest heavens, in complete and eternal glory. We have gone through the several ages of time as the providence and word of God have led us. We have seen all the church's enemies fixed in endless misery, and have seen the church presented in her perfect redemption before her Father in heaven, there to enjoy this most unspeakable and inconceivable glory and blessed-

ness; and there we leave her to enjoy this glory throughout the never-ending ages of eternity.

Now all Christ's enemies will be perfectly put under his feet, and he shall have his most perfect triumph over sin and Satan, and all his instruments, and death, and hell. Now shall all the promises made to Christ by God the Father before the foundation of the world, the promises of the covenant of redemption, be fully accomplished. Christ shall now have perfectly obtained the joy set before him, for which he undertook those great sufferings in his state of humiliation. Now shall all the hopes and expectations of the saints be fulfilled. The state of the church before was progressive and preparatory: but now she is arrived to her most perfect state of glory. All the glory of the church on earth is but a faint shadow of this her consummate glory in heaven.

Now Christ the great Redeemer shall be most perfectly glorified. God the Father shall be glorified in him, and the Holy Ghost shall be most fully glorified in the perfection of his work on the hearts of all the church. And now shall that new heaven and new earth, or the renewed state of things, be completely finished, after the material frame of the old heavens and old earth is destroyed. Rev. 21 : 1. "And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away." And now will the great Redeemer have perfected every thing that appertains to the work of redemption, which he began so soon after the fall of man. And who can conceive the triumph of those praises which shall be sung in heaven on this great occasion, so much greater than that on the fall of

Antichrist ! The beloved disciple John, Rev. 19, seems to want expressions to describe those praises, and says, " It was as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia ; for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth." But much more inexpressible will those praises be, which will be sung in heaven after the final consummation of all things. How shall the praises of that vast and glorious multitude be as mighty thunderings indeed !

How are all the former things passed away, and in what a glorious state are things fixed to remain to all eternity !——And as Christ, when he first entered upon the work of redemption, had the kingdom committed to him of the Father, and as he took on himself the administration of the affairs of the universe, to manage all so as to subserve the purposes of this work ; so now, the work being finished, he will deliver up the kingdom to God, even the Father. 1 Cor. 15 : 24. " Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father ; when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority and power." Not that Christ shall cease to reign after this ; for it is said, Luke, 1 : 33, " He shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end ;" and Dan. 7 : 14, " His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed." But the meaning is, that Christ shall deliver up that kingdom or dominion which he has over the world, as the Father's delegate or vicegerent, which the Father committed to him, to be managed in subserviency to this great design of redemption. The

end of this commission, or delegation, which he had from the Father, seems to be to subserve this particular design of redemption; and therefore, when that design is fully accomplished, the commission will cease, and Christ will deliver it up to the Father, from whom he received it.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### IMPROVEMENT OF THE WHOLE.

I proceed now to some improvement of the whole that has been said.

I. Hence we may learn *how great a work is this of redemption*. We have now, though in a very imperfect manner, considered it, in its whole progress, from its beginning after the fall to its consummation at the end of the world. We have seen how God has carried on this building, by a long succession of wonderful works, advancing it higher and higher from one age to another, till the top-stone is laid. And now let us consider how great this work is. Do men, when they behold some great edifice, admire its magnificence; how well may we admire the greatness of this building of God, which he builds up age after age! There are three things exhibited to us in what has been said, which especially show the *greatness* of the work of redemption.

1. The greatness of those *particular events*, and

dispensations of providence by which it is accomplished. How great are those things which God has done, which are but so many parts of this great work! What great things were done in the world to *prepare the way* for Christ's coming to purchase, and what great things were done in the actual purchase of redemption! What a wonderful thing was accomplished to put Christ in an immediate capacity for this purchase—his *incarnation*, that God should become man! And what great things were done in that purchase, that a person, who is the eternal Jehovah, should live upon earth for four or five and thirty years, in a mean, despised condition, that he should spend his life in such labors and sufferings, and at last die upon the cross! And what great things have been done to accomplish the *success* of Christ's redemption! what great things to put him into a capacity to accomplish this success! For this purpose he rose from the dead and ascended into heaven, and all things were made subject to him. How many miracles have been wrought, what mighty revolutions have been brought about in the world already, and how much greater shall be brought about in order to it!

2. The *number* of those great events by which God carries on this work, shows the greatness of the work. Those mighty revolutions are so many as to fill up many ages. The particular wonderful events by which the work of creation was carried on filled up six days; but the great dispensations by which the work of redemption is carried on, are so many that they fill up at least six or seven thousand years, as we have reason to conclude from the word of God. There were great things wrought

in this affair before the flood, and in the flood the world was once destroyed by water, and God's church was so wonderfully preserved from it in order to carry on this work. And after the flood, what great things did God work relating to the re-settling of the world, to the building of Babel, the dispersion of the nations, the shortening of the days of man's life, the calling of Abraham, the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, and that long series of wonderful providences relating to Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph; and those wonders in Egypt and at the Red Sea, in the wilderness, and in Canaan in Joshua's time, and by a long succession of wonderful providences from age to age towards the nation of the Jews.

What great things were wrought by God, in so often overturning the world before Christ came, to make way for his coming! What great things were done also in Christ's time, and after that in overturning Satan's kingdom in the heathen empire, and in so preserving his church in the dark times of Popery, and in bringing about the Reformation! How many great and wonderful things will be effected in accomplishing the glorious times of the church, and at Christ's last coming on the day of judgment, in the destruction of the world, and in carrying the whole church into heaven!

3. The glorious issue of this whole work, in the perfect and eternal destruction of the wicked, and in the consummate glory of the righteous. And now let us once more take a view of this building, now all is finished and the top-stone laid. It appeared in a glorious height in the apostles' time, and much more glorious in the time of Constantine, and will

appear much more glorious still after the fall of Antichrist; but at the consummation of all things, it appears in an immensely more glorious height than ever before. Now it appears in its greatest magnificence, as a complete lofty structure, whose top reaches to the heaven of heavens; a building worthy of the great God, the King of kings.

And from what has been said, we may infer that the work of redemption is the greatest of all God's works of which we have any notice, and it is the end of all his other works. It appears plainly from what has been said, that this is the principal of all God's works of providence, and that all are subordinate to the great work of redemption. We see that all the revolutions in the world are to subserve this grand design. This shows how much greater the work of redemption is than the work of creation; because it is the end of it, as the use of a house is the end of building it. But the work of redemption is the sum of all God's works of providence; all are subordinate to it: so the work of the new creation is more excellent than the old. So it ever is, that when one thing is removed by God to make way for another, the new one excels the old. Thus the temple excelled the tabernacle; the new covenant the old; the new dispensation of the Gospel the dispensation of Moses; the throne of David the throne of Saul; the priesthood of Christ the priesthood of Aaron; the new Jerusalem the old; and so the new creation far excels the old.

God has used the creation for no other purpose but to subserve the designs of this work. To answer this end, he has created and disposed of mankind, the angels, the earth, the highest heavens. God



created the world to provide a spouse and a kingdom for his Son; and the setting up of the kingdom of Christ, and the spiritual marriage of the spouse to him, is what the whole creation labors and travails in pain to bring to pass. This work of redemption is so much the greatest of all the works of God, that all others are to be regarded either as parts of it, or appendages to it, or are some way reducible to it; and so all the decrees of God some way or other belong to that eternal covenant of redemption which was between the Father and the Son before the foundation of the world. Every decree of God is some way or other reducible to that covenant. And seeing this work of redemption is so great, we need not wonder that the angels desire to look into it. And we need not wonder that so much is made of it in Scripture—that it is so much insisted on in the histories, and prophecies, and songs of the Bible, for the work of redemption is the great subject of the whole—its doctrines, its promises, its types, its songs, its histories, and its prophecies.

II. Hence we may learn how *God is the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and end of all things*. Such are the characters and titles we find often ascribed to him in Scripture. Isa. 41 : 4. "Who hath wrought and done it, calling the generations from the beginning? I the Lord, the first, and with the last; I am he." And particularly does the Scripture ascribe such titles to God, where it speaks of providence as it relates to and is summed up in the great work of redemption. Isa. 44 : 6, 7, and 48 : 9–12. Therefore, when Christ reveals the future great events of providence relating to his church and people to his disciple John, he often reveals himself

under this character. Rev. 1 : 8. "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." So again, verse 10, 11. "I heard behind me a great voice as of a trumpet, saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last." Alpha and Omega being the names of the first and the last letters of the Greek alphabet, it signifies the same as his being the first and the last, and the beginning and the end. Rev. 21 : 6. "And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end," 22 : 12, 13. "And behold, I come quickly ; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

We have seen on what design God began the course of his providence in the beginning of the generations of men ; and how he has all along carried things on agreeably to the same design without ever failing ; and how at last the conclusion and final issue of all things are to God ; and therefore may well now cry out with the apostle, Rom. 11 : 33, "O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God ! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out !" and verse 36, "For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things : to whom be glory for ever. Amen."

We have seen how other things came to an end one after another ; how states, and kingdoms, and empires fell, and came to nothing, even the greatest and strongest of them ; we have seen how the world has been often overturned, and will be more remark-

ably yet; we have seen how it was first destroyed by water, and how at last it shall be utterly destroyed by fire: but yet God remains the same through all ages. He was before the beginning of this course of things, and he will be after the end of them. Psalm 102: 25, 26. Thus God is *he who is*, and *who was*, and *who is to come*.

We have seen, in a variety of instances, how all other gods perish. Those in the nations about Canaan, and throughout the Roman empire, are all destroyed, and their worship long since overthrown. We have seen how Antichrist, who has called himself a god on earth—how Mohammed, who claims religious honors—how all the gods of the Heathen through the world will come to an end; and how Satan, the great dragon, that old serpent, who has set up himself as god of this world, will be cast into the lake of fire, there to suffer his complete punishment: but Jehovah remains, his kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and of his dominion there is no end. We have seen what mighty changes there have been in the world; but God is unchangeable, *the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever*.

We began at the head of the stream of divine providence, and have traced it through its various windings, till we are come to the end where it issues. As it began in God, so it ends in him. God is the infinite ocean into which it empties itself. Providence is like a mighty wheel, whose circumference is so high that it is dreadful, with the glory of the God of Israel above upon it; as it is represented in Ezekiel's vision. We have seen the revolution of this wheel, and how, as it was from God, its return has been to God again. All the events of divine

providence are like the links of a chain; the first link is from God, and the last is to him.

III. We may see by what has been said, how *Christ has in all things the pre-eminence*. For he is the great Redeemer; and therefore the work of redemption being the sum of God's works of providence, shows the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, as being above all, and through all, and in all. That God intended the world for his Son's use in the work of redemption, is one reason why he created the world by him, Eph. 3 : 9-12. What has been said, shows how all the *purposes* of God are in Christ; and how he is before all, and above all. All things consist in him, are governed by him, and are for him, Col. 1 : 15-18. God makes him his first-born, higher than the kings of the earth, and sets his throne above their thrones. God has always upheld his kingdom, when others have come to an end; that appears at last above all, however greatly opposed for so many ages. All other kingdoms fall, but his kingdom is the last, and never gives place to any other.

We see that whatever changes there are, and however highly Christ's enemies exalt themselves, yet he reigns in uncontrolled power and immense glory: in the end, his people are all perfectly saved and made happy, and all his enemies become his footstool. And thus God gives the world to his Son for his inheritance.

IV. Hence we may see *the consistency, order, and beauty of God's works of providence*. If we behold events in any other view, all will look like confusion, like the tossing of waves; things will look as though one confused revolution came to pass

after another, merely by blind chance, without any regular or certain end. But if we consider the events of providence in the light in which the Scriptures set them before us, they appear an orderly series of events, all wisely directed in excellent harmony and consistence, tending all to one end. The wheels of providence are not turned round by blind chance, but are full of eyes round about, as Ezekiel represents, and are guided by the Spirit of God: where the Spirit goes, they go. All God's works of providence, through all ages, meet at last, as so many lines in one centre.

God's work of providence, like that of creation, is but one. The events of providence are not so many distinct, independent works; but rather so many different parts of one work, one regular scheme. They are all united, just as the several parts of one building: there are many stones, many pieces of timber, but all are so joined, and fitly framed together, that they make but one building: they have all but one foundation, and are united at last in one top-stone.

God's providence may not unfitly be compared to a river, having innumerable branches, beginning in different regions, and at a great distance one from another, and all conspiring to one common issue. After their very diverse and apparently contrary courses, they all collect together, the nearer they come to their common end, and at length discharge themselves at one mouth into the same ocean. The different streams of this river are apt to appear confused to us, because of our limited sight whereby we cannot see the whole at once. A man who sees but one or two streams at a time, cannot tell what their

course tends to. Their course seems very crooked, and different streams seem to run for awhile different and contrary ways; and if we view things at a distance, there seem to be innumerable obstacles and impediments, as rocks, mountains, and the like, in the way of their ever uniting and coming to the ocean; but yet if we trace them, they all unite at last, disgorge themselves in one into the same great ocean. Not one of all the streams fail.

V. From the whole that has been said, we may strongly argue that *the Scriptures are the word of God, because they alone inform us what is God's design in all these works.* God doubtless is pursuing some design, and carrying on some scheme, in the various changes and revolutions which from age to age come to pass in the world. It is most reasonable to suppose that there is some great design to which Providence subordinates all the great successive changes in the world which he has made; that all revolutions, from the beginning of the world to the end, are but the various parts of the same scheme, all conspiring to bring about that great event which the Creator and Governor of the world has ultimately in view; and that the scheme will not be finished, nor the design fully accomplished, till the end of the world, and the last revolution is brought about.

Now there is nothing else that informs us what this scheme and design of God in his works is, but the Holy Scriptures. Nothing else pretends to set in view the whole series of God's works of providence from beginning to end, and to inform us how all things were from God at first, for what end they are, how they were ordered from the beginning,

how they will proceed to the end of the world, what they will come to at last, and how then all things shall be to God. Nothing else but the Scriptures has any pretence of showing any regular scheme or drift in those revolutions which God orders from age to age. Nothing else pretends to show what God would effect by the things which he has done, is doing, and will do ; what he seeks and intends by them. Nothing else pretends to show, with any distinctness or certainty, how the world began, or to tell us the true original of things. Nothing but the Scriptures sets forth how God governed the world from the beginning, in an orderly history ; or how he will govern it to the end, by an orderly prophecy of future events ; agreeable to the challenge which God makes to the gods, and prophets, and teachers of the Heathen. Isa. 41 : 22, 23. " Let them bring them forth, and show us what shall happen : let them show the former things what they be, that we may consider them, and know the latter end of them ; or declare us things for to come. Show the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know that ye are gods."

It appears fit and requisite that the intelligent and rational beings of the world should know something of God's scheme and design in his works : for they doubtless are principally concerned in them, rather than brute beasts and lifeless things. The revolutions by which God's great design is brought to pass, are doubtless chiefly among them, and concern their state. And therefore surely it is requisite that they should know something of it ; especially since God has given his rational creatures a capacity of seeing him in his works, for this end,

that they may see God's glory in them, and give him the glory which is his due. But how can they see God's glory in his works, if they do not know what is his design in them, and what ends he would accomplish by what he is doing?

Further, it is fit that mankind should be somewhat informed of God's design in the government of the world, because they are made capable of actively falling in with that design, of promoting it, and acting herein as his friends and subjects. It is therefore reasonable to suppose that God has given mankind some revelation to inform them of this: but there is nothing else that does it but the Bible. In the Bible this is done. Here we learn the first original of things, and have an orderly account of the scheme of God's works from the beginning, through those ages which are beyond the reach of all other histories. Here we are told what was God's purpose in the whole, what is his great end, how he has contrived the whole design, and the great things he would accomplish. Here we have an account worthy of God, and exceedingly showing forth the glory of his perfections, his majesty, his wisdom, his holiness, grace and love; and his exaltation above all, as the first and the last.

Here we are shown the various parts of the work of providence, and how all are connected together in a regular, beautiful and glorious frame; and have an account of the whole scheme of providence, from the beginning of the world to the end of it, either in history or prophecy, and are told how things will issue in the subduing of God's enemies, the salvation and glory of his church,



and setting up the everlasting kingdom of his Son.

How rational, worthy and excellent a revelation is this! and how excellent a book is the Bible, which contains so much beyond all other books in the world! and what characters it bears of being indeed divine! a book that the great Jehovah has given to mankind for their instruction, without which we should be left in miserable darkness and confusion.

VI. From what has been said, we may see the glorious *majesty and power of God in this work of redemption*. His glorious power appears in upholding his church for so long a time, and carrying on this work; upholding it oftentimes when it was but as a little spark, or as smoking flax, in which the fire was almost extinct, and the powers of earth and hell combined to destroy it. Yet God has never suffered them to quench it, and finally will bring forth judgment unto victory. God glorifies his strength in his church's weakness; in causing his people, who are but like little infants, finally to triumph over all earth and hell; so that they shall tread on the lion and adder, the young lion and dragon shall they trample under foot. The glorious power of God appears in conquering his many and mighty enemies by that Savior who was once an infant in a manger, and appeared as a poor, weak, despised man. He conquers them and triumphs over them in their own weapon, the cross.

The glorious majesty of God appears in conquering all those mighty enemies of the church in one age after another; in conquering Satan, that proud and strong spirit, and all his hellish host;

in bringing him down, long after he had vaunted himself as god of this world, and when, for successive ages, he had done his utmost to support himself in his kingdom.

God's power gloriously appears in conquering Satan when exalted in the strongest and most potent heathen kingdom that ever he had, the Roman empire. Christ, our Michael, overcame him; the devil was cast out, and there was found no more place for him in heaven; but he was cast out unto the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. Again, his power gloriously appears in conquering him in that kingdom wherein his pride, and subtlety, and cruelty above all appears—the kingdom of Antichrist. It also gloriously appears in conquering him in that greatest and strongest combination and opposition of the devil and his adherents against Christ and his church, just before the fall of Antichrist, wherein his visible kingdom receives a fatal blow, on which a universal downfall of it follows all over the world.

Thus the glorious power of God appears in conquering the devil, time after time, after long time given him to strengthen himself to his utmost. He was overthrown in his heathen Roman empire, after he had been making himself strong in those parts of the world, ever since the building of Babel. His kingdom was overthrown more fatally and universally all over the world, after he had another opportunity to strengthen himself to his utmost for many ages, by setting up those two great kingdoms of Antichrist and Mohammed, and to establish his interest in the heathen world. We have seen how these kingdoms of God's enemies,

that look strong, as though it was impossible to overthrow them; yet, when God appears, they seem to melt away, as the fat of lambs before the fire, and are driven away as the chaff before the whirlwind.

Those mighty kingdoms of Antichrist and Mohammed, which have made such a figure for so many ages, and have trampled the world under foot, when Christ appears, will vanish away like a shadow, and disappear of themselves, and vanish like darkness in a room when light is introduced. What are God's enemies in his hands? How is their greatest strength weakness when he rises up! and how weak will they all appear together at the day of judgment! Thus we may apply those words in the song of Moses, Exod. 15: 6, "Thy right hand, O Lord, is become glorious in power: thy right hand, O Lord, hath dashed in pieces the enemy." And how great does the majesty of God appear in overturning the world from time to time to accomplish his designs, and at last in causing the earth and heavens to flee away, for the advancement of the glory of his kingdom!

VII. From what has been said, we may see the glorious *wisdom of God*. This wisdom appears in his creating the world, creating it for such an excellent use, and to accomplish so glorious a work; and in bringing so great good out of such great evil, making the fall and ruin of mankind, in itself so deplorable, an occasion of accomplishing such a glorious work as redemption, and of bringing his elect to a state of such unspeakable happiness. And how glorious does the wisdom of God appear in that long course and series of revolutions in the

world, in bringing such order out of confusion, in frustrating the most subtle machinations of Satan, in which he most gloried, and turning them into occasions of so much the more glorious triumph of his Son Jesus Christ! And how wonderful is the wisdom of God, in bringing all such manifold and various changes and overturnings in the world to such a glorious period at last, and in so directing all the wheels of providence by his skilful hand, that every one of them conspires, as the manifold wheels of a most curious machine, at last to such an excellent issue, such a manifestation of the divine glory, such happiness to his people, and such a glorious and everlasting kingdom to his Son!

VIII. From what has been said, we may see the stability of *God's mercy and faithfulness to his people*; that he never forsakes his inheritance, and remembers his covenant to them through all generations. Now we may see the truth of our text, "The moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool; but my righteousness shall endure for ever and ever, and my salvation from generation to generation." And now we may see abundant reason for that name of God which he reveals to Moses. *Exod. 3:14.* "And God said unto Moses, *I am that I am*:" I am the same that I was when I entered into covenant with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and ever shall be the same: I keep covenant for ever: I am self-sufficient, all-sufficient, and immutable.

And now we may see the truth of *Psalm 36:5, 6.* "Thy mercy, O Lord, is in the heavens: and thy faithfulness reacheth unto the clouds. Thy righteousness is like the great mountains; thy judgments are a great deep." And if we consider

what has been said, we need not wonder that the Psalmist, in the 136th Psalm, so often repeats, *For his mercy endureth for ever*: as if he were in an ecstasy at the consideration of the perpetuity of God's mercy to his church, delighted to think of it, and knew not how but continually to express it. Let us with like pleasure and joy celebrate the everlasting duration of God's mercy and faithfulness to his church and people, and let us be comforted by it under all the dark circumstances of the church of God, all the uproar and confusion that are in the world, and all the threatenings of the church's enemies. And let us take encouragement earnestly to pray for those glorious things which God has promised to accomplish for his church.

IX. Hence we may learn *how happy a society the church of Christ is*. All this great work is for them. Christ undertook it for their sakes, and for their sakes he carries it on: it is because he has loved them with an everlasting love. For their sakes he overturns states and kingdoms. For their sakes he shakes heaven and earth. He gives men for them, and people for their life. Since they have been precious in God's sight they have been honorable; and therefore he first gives the blood of his own Son to them, and then for their sakes gives the blood of all their enemies.

For their sakes he made the world, and for their sakes he will destroy it; for their sakes he built heaven, and for their sakes he makes his angels ministering spirits. Therefore the apostle says, 1 Cor. 3:21, &c. "All things are yours: whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all

are yours." How blessed is this people who are redeemed from among men, and are the first fruits unto God and to the Lamb; who have God in all ages for their protection and help! Deut. 33:29. "Happy art thou, O Israel; who is like unto thee, O people saved by the Lord, the shield of thy help, and who is the sword of thy excellency! and thine enemies shall be found liars unto thee, and thou shalt tread upon their high places."

Let who will prevail now, let the enemies of the church exalt themselves as they will, these are the people that shall finally prevail. The last kingdom shall be theirs, and shall not be left to others. We have seen to what a blessed issue things shall finally be brought, to what glory they shall arrive, and remain in possession of for ever and ever; after all the kingdoms of the world are come to an end, and the earth is removed, and mountains are carried into the depth of the sea, or where the sea was, and this lower earth shall all be dissolved. O happy people, and blessed society! Well may they spend an eternity in praises and hallelujahs to Him who hath loved them, and will love them to eternity.

X. And, lastly, hence *all wicked men, all that are in a christless condition, may see their exceeding misery*. You that are such, whoever you are, have no part or lot in this matter. You are never the better for any of these things; yea, your guilt is but so much the greater, and the misery you are exposed to so much the more dreadful. You are some of those against whom God, in the progress of this work, exercises so much manifest wrath; some of those enemies who are liable to be made Christ's footstool, to be ruled with a rod of iron

and to be dashed in pieces. You are some of the seed of the serpent, to bruise the head of which is one great design of all this work. Whatever glorious things God accomplishes for his church, if you continue in your present state, they will not be glorious to you. The most glorious times of the church are always the most dismal to the wicked and impenitent. Isa. 66 : 14. Wherever glorious things are foretold concerning the church, there terrible things are foretold concerning the wicked, its enemies. So in remarkable deliverances wrought for the church, there has been also a remarkable execution of wrath upon its enemies.

When God delivered the children of Israel out of Egypt ; at the same time he remarkably poured out his wrath on Pharaoh and the Egyptians. When he brought them into Canaan by Joshua, and gave them that good land, he remarkably executed wrath upon the Canaanites. When they were delivered out of their Babylonish captivity, signal vengeance was inflicted on the Babylonians. When the Gentiles were called, and the elect of God were saved by the preaching of the apostles, Jerusalem and the persecuting Jews were destroyed in a most awful manner. I might observe the same concerning the glory accomplished to the church in the days of Constantine, at the overthrow of Satan's visible kingdom in the downfall of Antichrist, and at the day of judgment. In all these instances, and especially in the last, there have been, or will be, exhibited most awful tokens of the divine wrath against the wicked. And to this class of men you belong.

God will indeed make use of you in this work ; but it will be for the *glory of his justice*, and not

*of his mercy.* You are some of those enemies of God who are reserved for the triumph of Christ's glorious power in overcoming and punishing them. You are some of those who shall be consumed with this accursed world after the day of judgment, when Christ and his church shall triumphantly and gloriously ascend to heaven. Let all who are in a christless condition seriously consider these things, and not be like the foolish people of the old world, who would not take warning when Noah told them that the Lord was about to bring a flood of waters upon the earth; or like the people of Sodom, who would not regard when Lot told them that God would destroy that city, and would not flee from the wrath to come, and so were consumed in that terrible destruction.

And now I would conclude my whole discourse on this subject, in words like those at the end of the Revelation: "These sayings are faithful and true, and blessed is he that keepeth these sayings. Behold, Christ cometh quickly, and his reward is with him, to render to every man according as his work shall be. And he that is unjust, shall be unjust still; and he that is filthy, shall be filthy still; and he that is holy, shall be holy still. Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city; for without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. He that testifieth these things, saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen: even so come, Lord Jesus."

THE END.







1  
 2  
 3  
 4  
 5  
 6  
 7  
 8  
 9  
 10  
 11  
 12  
 13  
 14  
 15  
 16  
 17  
 18  
 19  
 20  
 21  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25  
 26  
 27  
 28  
 29  
 30  
 31  
 32  
 33  
 34  
 35  
 36  
 37  
 38  
 39  
 40  
 41  
 42  
 43  
 44  
 45  
 46  
 47  
 48  
 49  
 50  
 51  
 52  
 53  
 54  
 55  
 56  
 57  
 58  
 59  
 60  
 61  
 62  
 63  
 64  
 65  
 66  
 67  
 68  
 69  
 70  
 71  
 72  
 73  
 74  
 75  
 76  
 77  
 78  
 79  
 80  
 81  
 82  
 83  
 84  
 85  
 86  
 87  
 88  
 89  
 90  
 91  
 92  
 93  
 94  
 95  
 96  
 97  
 98  
 99  
 100  
 101  
 102  
 103  
 104  
 105  
 106  
 107  
 108  
 109  
 110  
 111  
 112  
 113  
 114  
 115  
 116  
 117  
 118  
 119  
 120  
 121  
 122  
 123  
 124  
 125  
 126  
 127  
 128  
 129  
 130  
 131  
 132  
 133  
 134  
 135  
 136  
 137  
 138  
 139  
 140  
 141  
 142  
 143  
 144  
 145  
 146  
 147  
 148  
 149  
 150  
 151  
 152  
 153  
 154  
 155  
 156  
 157  
 158  
 159  
 160  
 161  
 162  
 163  
 164  
 165  
 166  
 167  
 168  
 169  
 170  
 171  
 172  
 173  
 174  
 175  
 176  
 177  
 178  
 179  
 180  
 181  
 182  
 183  
 184  
 185  
 186  
 187  
 188  
 189  
 190  
 191  
 192  
 193  
 194  
 195  
 196  
 197  
 198  
 199  
 200  
 201  
 202  
 203  
 204  
 205  
 206  
 207  
 208  
 209  
 210  
 211  
 212  
 213  
 214  
 215  
 216  
 217  
 218  
 219  
 220  
 221  
 222  
 223  
 224  
 225  
 226  
 227  
 228  
 229  
 230  
 231  
 232  
 233  
 234  
 235  
 236  
 237  
 238  
 239  
 240  
 241  
 242  
 243  
 244  
 245  
 246  
 247  
 248  
 249  
 250  
 251  
 252  
 253  
 254  
 255  
 256  
 257  
 258  
 259  
 260  
 261  
 262  
 263  
 264  
 265  
 266  
 267  
 268  
 269  
 270  
 271  
 272  
 273  
 274  
 275  
 276  
 277  
 278  
 279  
 280  
 281  
 282  
 283  
 284  
 285  
 286  
 287  
 288  
 289  
 290  
 291  
 292  
 293  
 294  
 295  
 296  
 297  
 298  
 299  
 300  
 301  
 302  
 303  
 304  
 305  
 306  
 307  
 308  
 309  
 310  
 311  
 312  
 313  
 314  
 315  
 316  
 317  
 318  
 319  
 320  
 321  
 322  
 323  
 324  
 325  
 326  
 327  
 328  
 329  
 330  
 331  
 332  
 333  
 334  
 335  
 336  
 337  
 338  
 339  
 340  
 341  
 342  
 343  
 344  
 345  
 346  
 347  
 348  
 349  
 350  
 351  
 352  
 353  
 354  
 355  
 356  
 357  
 358  
 359  
 360  
 361  
 362  
 363  
 364  
 365  
 366  
 367  
 368  
 369  
 370  
 371  
 372  
 373  
 374  
 375  
 376  
 377  
 378  
 379  
 380  
 381  
 382  
 383  
 384  
 385  
 386  
 387  
 388  
 389  
 390  
 391  
 392  
 393  
 394  
 395  
 396  
 397  
 398  
 399  
 400  
 401  
 402  
 403  
 404  
 405  
 406  
 407  
 408  
 409  
 410  
 411  
 412  
 413  
 414  
 415  
 416  
 417  
 418  
 419  
 420  
 421  
 422  
 423  
 424  
 425  
 426  
 427  
 428  
 429  
 430  
 431  
 432  
 433  
 434  
 435  
 436  
 437  
 438  
 439  
 440  
 441  
 442  
 443  
 444  
 445  
 446  
 447  
 448  
 449  
 450  
 451  
 452  
 453  
 454  
 455  
 456  
 457  
 458  
 459  
 460  
 461  
 462  
 463  
 464  
 465  
 466  
 467  
 468  
 469  
 470  
 471  
 472  
 473  
 474  
 475  
 476  
 477  
 478  
 479  
 480  
 481  
 482  
 483  
 484  
 485  
 486  
 487  
 488  
 489  
 490  
 491  
 492  
 493  
 494  
 495  
 496  
 497  
 498  
 499  
 500  
 501  
 502  
 503  
 504  
 505  
 506  
 507  
 508  
 509  
 510  
 511  
 512  
 513  
 514  
 515  
 516  
 517  
 518  
 519  
 520  
 521  
 522  
 523  
 524  
 525

James Montague Blair  
Philadelphia Pa

